

JOURNEY FREEDOM!



SPYING out the **LAND**

J2F Book 5

We see the
land ... The LORD
our God has
given us a GOOD
land, a land
flowing with milk
and honey ...
Let us enter in!

*There is no copyright on this material. However, no part may be reproduced and/or presented for **personal** gain. All rights to this material are reserved to further the Kingdom of our LORD Jesus Christ **ONLY**.*

For further information or to place an order, please contact us at:

Tel: +27 (0) 60 825 5780
Fax: +27 (0) 86 681 9458
E-mail: kanaan@iafrica.com
Website: www.kanaanministries.org

Office hours: Monday to Friday, 9 AM to 2 PM

The Netherlands

Media Manager Europe
email: orders@kanaanministires.nl

Kanaan International Website

Website: www.eu.kanaanministries.org

Overview of the Journey

- J2F1 “MAN’S PURPOSE AND THE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT”

We discover that each and everyone of us have been created by **GOD the Father** with a **UNIQUE** purpose and destiny. In fulfilling this **purpose**, GOD has placed within each of us a special combination of **gifts**. When we discover our gifts, and **develop** them, we are able to walk in **GOD’S Destiny** for us ... as well as being able to bless and **help others**. We also learn how to **protect** our gifts from attack.

- J2F2 “GENERATIONAL BLESSINGS”

Each and every one of us have been given a **piece of land**, a garden. This land represents ourselves, as well as our **family**. We study the important and vital role of the **father** — how it is his job to keep, protect, and **nurture** the garden of our family.

As **priest** of the home, a father has a mandate to **bless** his children. This **blessing** is not simply speaking words of encouragement — but **role-modelling**, training, and **teaching** our children to walk in **GOD’S Ways** and **SH’MA** His Voice in **LOVING** obedience. It is a father that establishes our **identity** and gives us **significance** ... and it is a father’s **purpose** to bring up his children in the LORD, leaving behind a **generational legacy** of righteousness.

- J2F3 “BLESSINGS AND CURSES OVER MOTHERHOOD”

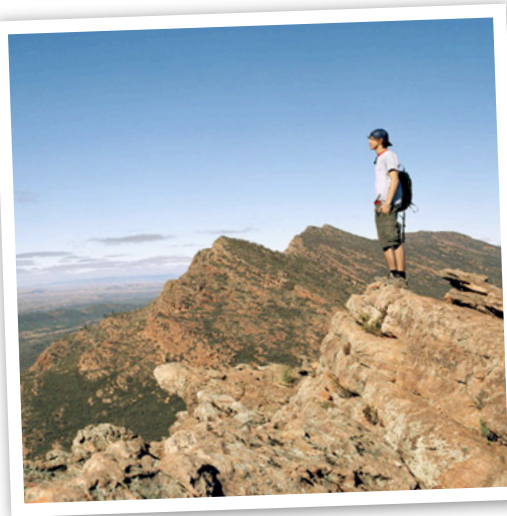
Just as important is the role of the father, so is the role of the **mother** to **nurture** and bond with her children. It is from our mothers that we learn to **develop** and interact in **relationships** ... we learn to either **LOVE** or FEAR, depending on our mother’s nurturing.

- J2F4 “UNDERSTANDING WATER BAPTISM (MIKVAH) AND THE BAPTISM OF THE HOLY SPIRIT”

In order to possess and enter our land, we must be **empowered** and equipped! Both the water baptism [**mikvah**] and baptism in the **Holy Spirit** set us apart as unto the LORD, and empower us to walk this journey with **success**.

The baptism in water (mikvah) of repentance is our declaration of **following Messiah** Y'shua¹ (Jesus) as King and LORD ... it is our “change of status” from slavery and bondage to **NEW life** in Messiah. Baptism in the Holy Spirit is our receiving our own **special** prayer language — we now speak GOD's Language! The Holy Spirit is also our **Perfect Counsellor**, directing and guiding our steps on this journey. He guides us into all **Truth**, strengthens us, and brings us **refreshing**.

- **J2F BOOKS 5 - 6**



Like Israel in the Book of Deuteronomy, we are stand at the **border**, looking into the land. We have **come out** of Egypt, been through the Red Sea (**mikvah**), received the **Covenant** at Mount Sinai, and learnt the lessons of the **wilderness**. We are ready to enter and POSSESS the land. We have seen the **giants** and places of strongholds — and yet we know we have the **VICTORY** in Messiah! He will **lead us** into battle, and grant us the victory. Are you **ready** for the battle?

In this manual, we explain the **warfare** ... just who/what the enemy is, how he and his kingdom **operate**, and the **weapons** we have in **Messiah** to fight. GOD has given us the land — His Fullness, Wholeness, and **FREEDOM** in Messiah — but we must **possess** it, we must fight. Are you **prepared** to take action? The **WILL** to possess the land is going to be one of the most important factors in gaining the **VICTORY**. The rest is just basic, straight-forward, **battle tactics** and warfare strategy. The motto? **Know** your enemy ... and be on the **offensive**.

* Y'shua (Hebrew) is Jesus' real name, which means “Salvation”. We have no problem with the name “Jesus” — it is merely the Greek transliteration of “Y'shua”. Jesus is the name most of us grew up with. Remember though, Y'shua was a Jew, of the Tribe of Judah, not a Greek. It's sort of like this ... when you come to know someone's real name, you want to use it, hence the use of Y'shua instead of Jesus. Another powerful reason to use Y'shua is that every time you say His Name, you are proclaiming “Salvation”. You will also note in some places, we have used the real Name of the FATHER, YHVH. The Name is made up of the Hebrew letters, Yod-Hey-Vav-Hey, and is most commonly pronounced “Yahweh” or “Jehovah”. Again, we have chosen to use this, as YHVH is the FATHER's Name.

Deuteronomy 1:21 “21 Behold, the LORD your GOD has set the land before you; go up and possess it, as the LORD, the GOD of your fathers, has said to you. Fear not, neither be dismayed.”

- **J2F BOOKS 7-9**

We end the J2F series by looking at “the **other side** of the coin” — dealing with EMOTIONAL roots and pain. Satan does not only put us in bondage ... but he also **bruises** us. These bruises grow roots, which we will **need to face** and root out of our lives. In J2F7, we look at the roots of bitterness, **rejection**, rebellion, and pride.

We work through **forgiveness** and learn to **let go** of the past so that we can **embrace** our PURPOSE and destiny in Messiah Y’shua (Jesus)! In the last two books (Book 8 and Book 9) of J2F, we continue to look at understanding emotional pain/wounds, and how to walk the journey of healing/restoration ...

- **J2F BOOK 8 AND 9**

As Kanaan Ministries continues to learn MORE, we again and again realize the IMPORTANCE of **bonding** and building **JOY-capacity** in childhood, and just how ESSENTIAL it is to address **childhood** pain on the journey to freedom and **RESTORATION** ... when we are emotionally bruised and hurt in childhood, and these wounds are NOT dealt with ... we will be **ARRESTED** in our development, **unable** to MATURE as GOD designed ... to **love** and grow within family and community.

Have you realized ALL pain
is RELATIONAL?

WHY?! We were created for RELATIONSHIP and FELLOWSHIP, right from the Beginning, when GOD **walked** with Adam in the Garden, in the **cool** of the day ... within each and everyone of us is the **DESIRE** and NEED for family, fellowship, and **COMMUNITY** ...

So what's **WRONG?!**



When I’m **hurt** in childhood — either through **rejection**, abuse (sexual, emotional, physical), and/or trauma — I **loose** trust and become a SURVIVOR ...

"I can't trust ANYONE!"
"If I don't look out for MYSELF, who else will?!"
"I'm not going to let ANYONE hurt me like that again!"

And so we **waver** between **desperately** wanting LOVE and fellowship (co-dependency), and putting up walls around us (isolation). NOT healing the wounds of childhood **perpetuates** the destructive family CYCLES of **brokenness** and hurt, from generation to generation ...

Unable to **cope** with life, we turn to B.E.E.P.S. — **B**ehaviors, **E**vents, **E**xperiences, **P**eople, and **S**ubstances — anything that brings comfort or **"escape"** from the pain ...

In J2F8, we learn the development stages of **childhood**, and how our brains are literally wired through **BONDING** ... this is so important for PARENTS! We also learn about the **lies/pain** of childhood, and how we carry this **BAGGAGE** into adulthood, which keeps us in ARRESTED development ...

J2F9 is the **follow-on** from J2F8, and discusses more specifically MOTHER-bonds, and how, if our mother-bonds were **weak** or **unhealthy**/un-Godly, we will be open to abuse and DECEPTION, particularly in the **FALSE prophetic** ...



As with the entire J2F series, J2F8 and J2F9 deal with **addressing** the **ROOT** issues ... this is the **only** way for true/complete RESTORATION!

Y'shua (Jesus) said He came to put an **AXE** to the **ROOT** — if you only look at dealing with the FRUIT (drugs, depression, eating disorders, anger, and so forth) and not the roots that PRODUCE the **fruit**, you will **not** walk in lasting victory and wholeness ...

*Y'shua (Jesus) came to heal
the BROKEN hearted!*

In J2F8 and J2F9 we learn to address the **ROOTS** of pain, hurt, and lies in our childhood — and what the **building blocks** are to grow to MATURITY — and the steps in the HEALING journey ...

Armed with these TOOLS, you can start to **pray** that these missing building blocks (of Godly **bonding**, building joy-capacity, **family**/community, and **mentorship**) be put back into place, that you can walk in greater **intimacy** with GOD the Father, and others! That you can MATURE and walk in WHOLENESS!

A word on the prayers of renunciation ...

Our books of prayers of renunciations work **IN-CONJUNCTION** with the J2F series (as you work through the materials) — they are not designed to be used on their own ...

And we want to **EMPHASIZE** the importance of working through the entire J2F series, in order to get the full understanding/teaching/background of dealing with generational curses and deliverance, how the spiritual realm works, and inner healing -- that you can pray so much more **EFFECTIVELY!**



PLEASE NOTE! In our years of experience/ministry, we have found that deliverance and inner healing are **NOT** just a prayer — we are **VERY** complicated beings, and there are so many areas one has to explore, to find the roots of so many issues we battle with.

This is why we ask people to work through the entire J2F series — this enables the person to understand what went wrong, to recognize and identify the roots/issue they need to deal with ... and how they are able to receive healing, and keep their deliverance ...

We also strongly encourage those who can, to get the **J2F DVD's**. The manuals are really just the framework for the series, where the DVD's are the real "meat" with Amanda teaching/expounding the material, using real-life examples, as well as slides and diagrams -- we especially encourage everyone to get the J2F6 DVD's, for more detailed explanation in dealing with and breaking generational curses.

Contents

Introduction ...	3
The position of the Body of Messiah in the world ...	32
Hierarchy of darkness ...	42
Keys of the Kingdom ...	52
Fasting ...	71
Writing a petition ...	93
Spiritual warfare and the Armour of God ...	100
The battleground of the mind ...	117
A word of jealousy ...	123
The mind section two ...	141
Charismatic witchcraft ...	171
The will ...	190
Child of God ...	211
The Hebrew language ...	216

Introduction

Introduction

We have studied *“Man’s Purpose And The Gifts Of The Spirit”* and learned how to “grow” our spirits by speaking blessings over each other. We have discovered what our spiritual gifts are, and how we can be a blessing to the Body of Messiah. We also learned about the attacks against our gifts and how to guard and protect that which the LORD has given to each one of us.

We then studied *“Generational Blessings”* and how God had intended for each one of us to be blessed by an earthly father. God’s Heart has always been for His children to be blessed and protected by a daddy that is the “strongman” of the family.

We then looked at the role of the mother in the family, and how important her presence is in the lives of her loved ones.



We are now ready to start dealing with the enemy who has moved into our lives through the wrong choices our forefathers and we have made.

Primary purpose of this course ...

The primary purpose of this “Journey2Freedom” is God's Primary Purpose. His Primary Purpose for us as individuals is stated in a number of different places in the Scriptures.

Basically, He wants us transformed and conformed into the Image of Messiah Y’shua [Jesus]. He wants Godly offspring that exhibit His Nature and Character – that think like He does, talk like He talks, and that view themselves and others as He views them.

In other words ... Abba Father wants children that are like their Daddy.

2 Corinthians 3:18 "18 And all of us, as with unveiled face, [because we] continued to behold [in the Word of God] as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, **are constantly being transfigured into His very own image in ever increasing splendor and from one degree of glory to another; [for this comes] from the Lord [Who is] the Spirit.**"

Romans 8:29 "29 For those whom He foreknew [of whom He was aware and loved beforehand], He also destined from the beginning [foreordaining them] **to be molded into the image of His Son [and share inwardly His likeness], that He might become the firstborn among many brethren.**"

As this is accomplished, we are able to increasingly love Him with an unconditional love, an *agape* love ... and being filled with this love, we can give it out to others. *Agape* is His Image, since "God is *Agape* [Love]".

Being "born again" ...

This is step one on the journey – the start. We apply the Blood of the Lamb upon the doorposts of our hearts ... we turn away from and come OUT of "Egypt" and it's system.

John 3:3-7 "3 Jesus answered him, I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, that **unless a person is born again (anew, from above), he cannot ever see (know, be acquainted with, and experience) the kingdom of God.** 4 Nicodemus said to Him, How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter his mother's womb again and be born? 5 Jesus answered, I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, unless a man is born of water and [even] the Spirit, he cannot [ever] enter the kingdom of God. [Ezek. 36:25-27.] 6 What is born of [from] the flesh is flesh [of the physical is physical]; and what is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7 Marvel not [do not be surprised, astonished] at My telling you, **You must all be born anew (from above).**"



The first step in the process of being conformed into the Image of Messiah is to be born again – to be "converted", to be born "from above". The Holy Spirit places God's Incorruptible Seed inside of us, and we become a son of God.

1 Peter 1:23 "23 **You have been regenerated (born again), not from a mortal origin (seed, sperm), but from one that is immortal by the ever living and lasting Word of God.**"

We call this step **JUSTIFICATION** – we are made "just-as-if-we-never-sinned", clothed and covered with Y'shua's [Jesus] Righteousness.

Being made "holy/perfect" ☺ separated, set apart, and purified.

*1 Peter 1:15-16 "15 But as the One Who called you is holy, **you yourselves also be holy in all your conduct and manner of living.** 16 For it is written, **You shall be holy, for I am holy.**"*

At the moment of being born again, we "legally" become "holy" [justified], because God sees us in accordance with the results of the cross. We are clothed with Y'shua's [Jesus] Righteousness. However, if we look "underneath" this Righteous Covering, there are for sure some areas that are not "holy" or "perfect". Becoming holy and perfect – were Y'shua's Righteousness and Image is worked into every area of our life – is a journey, one step at a time. This process is called SANCTIFICATION. God the Father works in us and walks with us, making us bit by bit into His Likeness – that we become sons of our Father ... a people set apart and walking according to His Ways. We see this exemplified in Israel's journey.

After coming out of Egypt, God brought His REDEEMED People [those who applied the blood to their doorposts and came out of Egypt] to Mount Sinai and gave them His Instructions, what is called the Torah. We see that the Torah was both God's Marriage Covenant [in Hebrew this is called a "ketubah"] and His Instructions in how we live, walk, and act as His Beloved Bride. Remember, those who came out of Egypt were slaves ... God as Father has to teach us how to walk in His Ways, how to be His sons and daughters, and this is the journey of sanctification. You see, although Israel came out of Egypt ... there was still so much of Egypt – it's systems, values, and mindsets – in the people. It is the same with us. When we receive Y'shua [Jesus] as Messiah and King, we are instantly separated and set apart out of "Egypt" – the kingdom of darkness – into Messiah and His Kingdom. Our ownership is transferred from satan to God ... we are separated and set apart unto God, just as He is separate [Holy] from the world.

*Colossians 1:13 "13 [The Father] has delivered and drawn us to Himself out of the control and the dominion of darkness and has transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of His love, 14 **In Whom we have our redemption through His blood, [which means] the forgiveness of our sins.**"*

This journey of sanctification is also the journey of possessing our land – destroying the giants and strongholds of darkness that have taken up residence, either through our forefathers or our own choices, and keeping us from the FULLNESS of Messiah. Sanctification – through the VICTORY of Messiah – is "evicting" these giants and strongmen, so that ALL our land may be under the rule and reign of the King!

Another way of understanding the process of sanctification is to think of it in terms of farming. When we come to Messiah, we receive His Incorruptible Seed – a seed-form of the Essence and Nature of God. The process of sanctification is allowing, nurturing, and growing this Seed that is may sprout up, take over, and bring forth Fruit – Good Fruit filled with LIFE and love – of It's own kind. Just like a seed planted in a physical garden, we can help this Seed to grow by nourishing it and protecting it ... we can also hinder It's growth by not giving it nourishment, or allowing weeds to come up to stifle It.

Cooperating with the Holy Spirit ...



As we have learnt in the previous manual¹, both the mikvah [water baptism] of repentance and the baptism of the Holy Spirit are our “equipments” of EMPOWERMENT in order to walk out this journey, to possess our land. The Holy Spirit is the DYNAMITE-Power of God within us, strengthening our faith, enabling us to speak God’s Language ... we learnt that the basic responsibility of the Holy Spirit is to promote, activate, and energize the sanctification process in each of our lives. We can co-operate with the Holy Spirit and help the process along – which, by the way, is the best approach – or, we can resist the Holy Spirit and hinder or even stop the process. Please beware however ... resisting the Holy Spirit is never a good idea. He is determined to have a fit Temple for both Himself and us to live in, and we are wise to let go of the things that displease God and that are harmful to us. He has many, much better “things” for us anyway. Remember too, that the Holy Spirit is our Perfect Counsellor! He guides and leads us on this journey ... the wise traveler will head His Gentle Promptings and seek His Insight.

Salvation is an ongoing decision ...

Just as our initial salvation is a choice we must make, likewise the continuation of our salvation is an ongoing choice. Paul admonishes us to actively choose to work with the Holy Spirit, striving to be cleansed of “all filthiness of flesh and spirit”. There is a purpose in this ... it is to “perfect” [complete, walking in wholeness and fullness] ourselves and to work towards holiness, and then to walk along side and help others.

¹ *“Journey2Freedom – Understanding Water Baptism And The Baptism Of The Holy Spirit”*

2 Corinthians 7:1 "1 **THEREFORE, SINCE these [great] promises are ours, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from everything that contaminates and defiles body and spirit, and bring [our] consecration to completeness in the [reverential] fear of God.**"

Can we really do this? Can we really "cleanse ourselves" from the filthiness of our flesh? The Scriptures answer yes ... so, how do we do this?



Being cleansed ...

There are many ways and/or disciplines of holiness leading to sanctification. Reading and/or meditating on the Word of God – the Bible – praying in one's natural or in the Spirit language, listening to the Holy Spirit, worship, and so forth. Each of these different ways is a part of the process, if we will embrace them.

It is the Holy Spirit who does the cleansing ... but we have to co-operate.

As the Holy Spirit shows us areas of uncleanness in our lives, we must respond in obedience and do the necessary forgiving, releasing, repenting, and praying for healing and restoration.

With the help of the Holy Spirit, we can break curses, do self-deliverance, and heal our emotional wounds ... thereby doing spiritual warfare for ourselves. Or, for those who have deep-seated problems, we can allow other Christians to minister to us, ones that have been trained by the Holy Spirit to help us deal with areas we don't know how to, or that we don't even know exist.

Being Stuck ...

No matter how well we pursue the spiritual disciplines, it seems that each of us, sooner or later, runs into walls, barriers, and obstacles of some sort, that, seemingly, we can't break through.

Some of us have this happen right after we are born again. Our obstacles are already "in place", obvious, and have us "stuck". And we don't know how to get "unstuck". We need help from others, and "we need it NOW!"

Pride, independence, rebellion, unforgiveness ... the Holy Spirit knows how to work with us no matter what.

Some of us would like to "just do it" on our own, without needing help from others. There is possibly an element of pride in this attitude, because God seems to have deliberately put us in families, and made us dependent on each other. In fact, James clearly states that we are to call on the elders in the church and pray for each other when we have need. It doesn't matter whether we would like to do it on our own or not. Stuck or not, like it or not, we are dependent on each other.

*James 5:14-16 "14 Is anyone among you sick? **He should call in the church elders (the spiritual guides).** And they should pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Lord's name. 15 And the prayer [that is] of faith will save him who is sick, and the Lord will restore him; and if he has committed sins, he will be forgiven. 16 Confess to one another therefore your faults (your slips, your false steps, your offenses, your sins) and pray [also] for one another, that you may be healed and restored [to a spiritual tone of mind and heart]. The earnest (heartfelt, continued) prayer of a righteous man makes tremendous power available [dynamic in its working]."*

The need for formal counseling-therapy ...

There have always been those in the church/community who are the "elders" – those who have grown in the LORD, matured, gained God's Wisdom and peace [shalom], and who are ruled by the Holy Spirit rather than by their carnal nature. These are the ones who we naturally go to for help.

Formalizing the counseling-therapy should promote safer, more effective ministry ... leading to faster maturing, healed saints.

All that we are doing in this "Journey2Freedom" series is putting together the study material and formalizing this natural occurrence – training and equipping mature followers of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus] to be more effective at their "job" than they might be otherwise.

Setting up a "Journey2Freedom" school is simply setting up a system so that more of people can be effectively helped – and healed – safely. This way, the entire church/community can grow and mature in the LORD ... even that "stuck" person, or the one who would like to be "independent".

Why some don't seek help ...

There are some unfortunate misconceptions that really block people from getting counseling therapy when they need it. We want to expose these misconceptions, and help you think through them. Please don't let any of these misconceptions keep you from God's further healing and freedom.

Deadly misconceptions:

1. I was perfected at the time of my salvation.
2. My past no longer affects me once I am saved.
3. Once saved, I will AUTOMATICALLY grow up into the Image of Messiah.

These are vicious misconceptions that cause passivity in this walk. They cause us to put up with hassles and oppression from demons; they cause guilt and discouragement; and they hinder our maturing into Godliness. In extreme cases, these misconceptions can cause us to reject our faith and to walk away from Messiah Y'shua [Jesus]. Over all, they are very deadly. Let's look at them one by one.

- ***I was perfected at the time of my salvation.***

This misconception really blocks people from receiving much needed help. If we are supposed to be "perfected", then we're not supposed to need help, much less ask for it. Right? We are not supposed to have any problems! We are supposed to "have it all together".

So if we have problems, this really puts us in a bind. Where can we go for help? How can we testify about the "overcoming" life if we are not "overcoming"? It can be a major cause of confusion and of "giving up" on this journey, following after Messiah.

If I'm already perfected, why am I acting the way that I am, and feeling the way that I feel?

The concept, "I was perfected at the time of my salvation", comes from a misinterpretation of a very wonderful verse of Scripture:

2 Corinthians 5:17 *"17 Therefore if any person is [ingrafted] in Christ (the Messiah) he is a new creation (a new creature altogether); the old [previous moral and spiritual condition] has passed away. Behold, the fresh and new has come!"*

This verse tends to be interpreted: "Old things are passed away, so they don't have any effect on me ... now I'm a new creature, and have no problems". It is also interpreted that there are no "open doors" from the past through which the enemy can work. Let's look at an example.

Let's say that you have a terrible problem with rejection, and you get "saved". You will likely still have your terrible problem with rejection. It is the exception rather than the rule that you will be delivered from rejection and its effects on and in your life at the time of your salvation. What is the truth? This rejection issue is so rooted, has so many interconnections, has so much "legal" ground, that it is not easily eliminated. God will have you work through most of the different aspects of rejection before you will be completely free. It's not that God can't heal you, but He does follow His Word.

There are usually "legal" transactions that have to occur, such as forgiving someone or confessing sin. You have a part to play. For instance, you might have to make some decisions that nullify previous decisions made by yourself and your ancestors.

What if you are saying to yourself, "I'm a new creation, I don't have any right to still feel rejection". What happens? Well, what happens is that a lot of self-condemnation, frustration, and a sense of failure will likely develop in your life.

Proper understanding of the spiritual realm and sanctification ...

It is true that once our spirit comes alive with the rebirth, we are a new creature ... our spirit is instantly regenerated. However, that doesn't mean that the body and the soul [including our mind] are regenerated. They are still in the process of becoming new, through the sanctification process. Other Scriptures wouldn't make any sense if this weren't true. Actually, all we have to do is look around at other people to know that this is truth ... or we can look into the mirror.



When we read 2 Corinthians 5:17 in context, we see that Paul is talking about the spiritual realm. He refers to not knowing Messiah any longer after the flesh, but after the spirit.

Further, when we look up the Greek verb in the phrase "all things are become new", we find the word *ginomai* translated as "are become".

Ginomai is a perfective verb tense, which has to do with a past event that has ongoing consequences, not completed consequences. A "long-winded" translation might be ... **"all things are become, and are continuing to become, new"**.

Our past salvation was an "event", and it continues to have ongoing consequences. We don't know about you, but we are glad that God's Salvation continues to work in our lives. We would hate to be stuck in our past – or current – condition.

In terms of other Scriptures that do or do not support the "perfected" concept, we don't have to search the whole Bible – although there are many other Scriptures that apply. All we have to do is to move back two chapters and ahead two chapters. We can stay in the same book with the same author, and let him give us more understanding about his writings. In Second Corinthians, we read in context that:

*2 Corinthians 3:18 “18 And all of us, as with unveiled face, [because we] continued to behold [in the Word of God] as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, **are constantly being transfigured into His very own image in ever increasing splendor and from one degree of glory to another; [for this comes] from the Lord [Who is] the Spirit.**”*

We would not need to be transformed into Messiah's Image from glory to glory if we have already arrived. There is a strong implication of time, of progress, of a sequence of events leading us through the transformation process – the sanctification process.

Now, looking ahead two chapters at the other passage:

*2 Corinthians 7:1 “**THEREFORE, SINCE** these [great] promises are ours, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from everything that contaminates and defiles body and spirit, **and bring [our] consecration to completeness in the [reverential] fear of God.**”*

Again, this verse implies a time process for cleansing and perfecting holiness. Even more, **it squarely lays a responsibility upon us to do, or to be involved in, the cleansing.** Our understanding of this is ... it is our responsibility to make ourselves available to the Holy Spirit, and to be obedient to His Directions, so that He can do the actual cleansing.

Neither of these two verses gives us any room to be "perfected" at salvation. They both have a time aspect, a process, a series of "ongoing consequences" ... a JOURNEY. There are numerous other Scriptures that also contain the same time aspect, implying an ongoing process and action. Some examples are:

*Romans 12:2 “2 Do not be conformed to this world (this age), [fashioned after and adapted to its external, superficial customs], **but be transformed (changed) by the [entire] renewal of your mind [by its new ideals and its new attitude]**, so that you may prove [for yourselves] what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God, even the thing which is good and acceptable and perfect [in His sight for you].”*

*2 Timothy 2:21 “21 So **whoever cleanses himself** [from what is ignoble and unclean, who separates himself from contact with contaminating and corrupting influences] will [then himself] be a vessel set apart and useful for honorable and noble purposes, consecrated and profitable to the Master, fit and ready for any good work.”*

*James 1:21, 27 “21 **So get rid of all uncleanness** and the rampant outgrowth of wickedness, and in a humble (gentle, modest) spirit receive and **welcome** the Word which implanted and rooted [in your hearts] contains the power to save your souls. 27 External religious worship [religion as it is expressed in outward acts] that is pure and unblemished in the sight of God the Father is this: to visit and help and care for the orphans and widows in their affliction and need, and to keep oneself unspotted and uncontaminated from the world.”*

1 John 3:3 "3 And everyone who has this hope [resting] on Him cleanses (purifies) himself just as He is pure (chaste, undefiled, guiltless)."

If we are already perfected, all these verses about what we need to do to grow and to be clean and to be sanctified wouldn't need to be in the Bible. So, we need to not be deceived by the misconception that we are supposed to be perfect already. If you have accepted this lie, let us encourage you to let go of it.

- *My past no longer affects me once I am saved.*

The good news is that our past is truly forgiven. The price for our sins has been paid through the cross of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus]. The bad news, however, is that the past does still effect us.

Our body and soul/mind are still "in process". Past habits of sin and ongoing weaknesses of the flesh need correcting. The beliefs of the mind, the continued action of ancestral curses, the hurts to our soul and spirit, and the influence of demonic spirits, still need to be attended to. We don't get rid of all the demonic oppression just because we get saved.

Sometimes we are gloriously set free in some area, for example, from addiction to alcohol, or lust, or cigarette smoking. Sometimes, God just sovereignly moves and sets us free. Generally however, this wonderful freedom does not just "come" to every area of our life ... it is a process of step-by-step gaining more ground, and walking in more freedom and healing.

There is also the danger of walking in DENIAL of your past. Remembering the TRUTH of who you are and where you come from, will progressively make you free! You need to embrace the truth of your past and deal with every sinful detail before the LORD, and then you will be set free and delivered.

God wants us to come to Him, grab hold of Him, and receive His Healing for ALL areas in our lives. It is wise to go back into the past and bring the various issues before God and do what is necessary to cleanse them. Then, we can move into the future without the past jeopardizing us, without needing to dwell on it.

- *Once saved, I will automatically grow up into the Image of Messiah.*

This is the third misconception. It would be nice, really nice, if it were true. After all, puppies grow up into dogs and kittens into cats, so we should just automatically grow up into the Image of Messiah. Right? No, unfortunately, we don't.

We have to make an ACTIVE stand. All the way through, the Bible addresses the issue of being active in our walk of faith. This concept is very prevalent. We can't get away from it.

Particularly in the Epistles, Paul writes admonishing us to be active as we "put off the old man", and we "put on the new man". That's action. Engage in warfare, overcome evil with good, overcome satan, repent, turn away from ... ACTION, participation, and co-operation with the Holy Spirit. In each of these commands, we are told to DO something. We are to be active and engage ourselves with the Truth, working with the Holy Spirit, so that we will grow spiritually and mature in the things of God.

Do you know what will happen if we just stand still, if we become passive? We will go backwards. When we let the flesh go its own way without fighting against it, it will take us back into sin. When we don't know how to stand against demonic forces, they will push us backwards. Demons encourage the flesh. So, we have to become active, actively engaged in the process of our cleansing and our standing against the enemy. Otherwise, we will not only not automatically "grow up", but we will slide back into immaturity.



Once we realize that we have powerful spiritual weapons to fight with that make us victorious, our concept changes of what it means to be in God's army.

There are two more verses we would like you to have in your arsenal of weapons concerning the need for us to choose, to be active, in order to receive God's Healing and FREEDOM.

*Romans 8:13 "13 For if you live according to [the dictates of] the flesh, you will surely die. But if through the **power of the [Holy] Spirit** you are [habitually] putting to death (making extinct, deadening) the [evil] deeds prompted by the body, **you shall [really and genuinely] live forever.**"*

*Colossians 3:1-2 "1 IF THEN **you have been raised with Christ [to a new life, thus sharing His resurrection from the dead],** aim at and seek the [rich, eternal treasures] that are above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. 2 And **set your minds and keep them set on what is above (the higher things),** not on the things that are on the earth."*

Lastly, it is hard to be an overcomer if we are passive. Let these Scriptures encourage you.

It is time to let go of all misconceptions concerning our need for further healing, once we have been saved. It is time to get rid of any other misconceptions we have about God and His Kingdom. Now is the time to receive all that He has for us, whether it comes directly from the Holy Spirit, or indirectly through one of God's human instruments.

Foundational principles ...

We need to understand the connection between God's Torah – His Instructions, Commandments, Teaching, Will, and Intent – and our walk as a disciple of Messiah.

*Psalms 119:165 "165 **Great peace have they who love Your law [Torah]; nothing shall offend them or make them stumble.**"*

You might be saying ... "We are New Testament Christians, we don't have to worry about the Torah [Law] – you know, Paul writes in Romans [6:14], 'Ye are not under the law, but under grace'."

In the West we have received incorrect teachings about the word "law" – we were taught it is a list of rules of "do's" and "don'ts" ... it's legalism, religious acts – "we are now not under the Law – we are now free! We are under grace!"

However, the correct translation of the word Law/Torah² is God's Instructions, Teaching, Commandments ... the Revelation of His Will and Intent.

If you believe you are no longer under the law, we invite you to come along with us. We will help you gain an appreciation for God's Instructions, Teaching, the Revelation of **God's** Will and Intent, and how to be in harmony with it. The bottom line of what we want you to receive from this chapter is this.

God's Torah [Law] – His Instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of God's Will and Intent – very much applies to us as followers of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus], as well as to everyone else. There are consequences, sometimes severe consequences, for violating or breaking God's Law, even for Christians. It is far wiser to conform with and align with God's Instructions, than try to fight or buck them. It is similar to trying to swim upstream versus downstream. God says, "Get with the flow!" God has provided a way to get free of past mistakes, failures, sin, and so forth. We are not necessarily trapped. But, once free, walk in obedience from now on.

By the way, it is true that we are living "under" grace, but it's not true that we can ignore the Law/Torah – God's Instructions, Teaching, the Revelation of God's Will and Intent – which is the implied conclusion when we take the above quoted scripture out of context.

Let's start by being clear about what type(s) of Law we are talking about.

- **Natural law.**

There are natural, physical laws that God put into effect on day one of Creation (Genesis 1:3-5). Light was released, and with it, all of the laws of physics, chemistry, metallurgy, meteorology, and so forth, came into action.

² For additional study, please see our book "*Law vs. Grace*", available from the website or for order from the office.

By the end of the second day, material had been created out of raw energy; the land and sky was in place. Starting on day three, God began to bring forth living creatures. He established the biological and physiological laws, such as the biochemical laws, laws of reproduction, and so forth.

The most important law, the one that He really wanted us to understand, was stated at least twice for each group of living creatures. That is, each one produces [reproduces] after his own kind (Genesis 1:11-25). It is here that the universal law of sowing and reaping was put into action – the “Principle of the Seed”³.

God then crowned His creation by creating man in His Image. He gave man not only the ability to reproduce his physiological nature, but to also reproduce God's Spiritual Abilities and Characteristics.

We will continue to talk about some of these laws, because God uses the natural to teach us about the spiritual, about Him. This is what we call the “Law of Parallels”. Paul teaches us that the natural/physical comes FIRST ... then the spiritual.

*1 Corinthians 15:46-49 “46 But it is not the spiritual life which **came first, but the physical** and then the spiritual. 47 The first man [was] from out of earth, made of dust (earthly-minded); the second Man [is] the Lord from out of heaven. [Gen. 2:7.] 48 Now those who are made of the dust are like him who was first made of the dust (earthly-minded); and as is [the Man] from heaven, so also [are those] who are of heaven (heavenly-minded). 49 And just as we have borne the image [of the man] of dust, so shall we and so let us also bear the image [of the Man] of heaven.”*

⇒ God gave Adam a Commandment – the first law requiring obedience.

*Genesis 2:17 “17 But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and blessing and calamity **you shall not eat**, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die.”*

God gave a Commandment that included the consequence if the Commandment was disobeyed. Adam (and Eve) had been clearly informed. They disobeyed anyhow, and experienced the result – death. First, the spiritual death as they lost fellowship with God ... and then the physical death.

God had given a Law [Instruction], a Commandment, and they violated it. They experienced the consequences. To this day, we as their children too experience the consequence. We now know about good and evil. We could have been spared all that this represents.

- *The Law of Moses.*

As we have already mentioned, the Torah is God's Instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of God's Will and Intent.

³ For additional study, see our book “A Messianic Perspective of Sukkot”, available from the website or for order from the office.

Many years later, God has Moses written down and codify His Law into the first five books of the Bible – the Torah [Pentateuch]. This Law had different parts dealing with moral, ceremonial, and civil aspects of God's Covenant with Israel ... but this Law did not originate with Moses.

We have many Scriptural examples of men showing that they knew how to relate to God, how to obey His Law and Commandments [His instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of God's Will and Intent] well before Moses. For example, Cain and Abel both brought a sacrifice to God (Genesis 4:3-5). Enoch (Genesis 5:22, 24) and Noah (Genesis 5:29-9:29) both knew God and had fellowship with Him. Abraham gave a tithe to Melchizedek (Genesis 14:17-20), and was known for the many altars (Genesis 12:8, 13:4, 18, 22:9) to God that he built.



All of this shows us that God's Law [His instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of God's Will and Intent] was in place, that it was "in operation" before His formal Covenant with Israel through Moses.

Much of the Law is applicable to all of mankind. We see proof of this in the Prophets, as they bring Oracles or Burdens (Isaiah 13:1, 19:1, 23:1; Nahum 1:1) against the various nations of the earth that were violating God's Law. They were going to experience the consequences of their disobedience.

Note, when the Scriptures refer to the "Law", it is usually the Torah ... sometimes the Psalms and Prophets are included.

- *The Torah - God's Law [His instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of God's Will and Intent]* .

In one sense, all "Law" is a representation of God. Since God cannot lie, because everything that He says "happens", what we see as Law shows us God.

The Book of Romans states this explicitly.

*Romans 1:20 "20 For ever since the creation of the world His invisible nature and attributes, that is, **His eternal power and divinity, have been made intelligible and clearly discernible in and through the things that have been made (His handiworks).** So [men] are without excuse [altogether without any defense or justification]."*

We feel that God's Nature, Character, Heart, Desires, Plans, and so forth are seen through His Torah [His instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of God's Will and Intent ... that is why the Psalmist could express his love of the Torah in such a powerful way.

When we separate out the ceremonial and cultural aspects of the Law/Torah, and leave the natural, moral, and relational aspects, in general, what we have left is a picture of God and His dealings with mankind.

- *The Torah - God's Law - and the New Testament follower of Messiah.*

In the New Testament, Y'shua [Jesus] makes it clear that we are still subject to the moral Law of God. He not only repeats the Ten Commandments, but He extends them. The sin is not "just" in breaking of the Commandment by "doing" something, but in breaking the Commandment by what seems to be a lesser action, but just "thinking" about doing something.

For example, He extends the penalty for murder to being angry at one's brother (Matthew 5:21-22), and He equates lusting after a woman in one's heart to actually committing adultery (Matthew 5:27-28).

There is an essential difference between us at this time in history and the Israelites back then under the Law of Moses.

We are free of the ceremonial, many of the civil (cultural), and all of the physical actions that they had to observe for righteousness' sake. God was using these requirements in the natural to teach them – and us – about the spiritual.

For example, Paul makes it very clear in Galatians that we do not have to be circumcised (a physical act) in order to be in Covenant with God.

*Galatians 5:6 "6 For [if we are] in **Christ Jesus, neither circumcision nor uncircumcision counts for anything, but only faith activated and energized and expressed and working through love.**"*

The New Testament makes it clear that the Law we are to observe now involves God's Moral Commandments and His Conditional Promises. In order to gain His Promises of salvation, forgiveness, healing, freedom from demonic torment, and so forth ... there are conditions we have to meet. We do it by faith, through the provisions that Y'shua [Jesus] has made available to us. Walking according to God's Instructions [Torah] enable us to both possess our land and receive God's Blessings.

Deuteronomy 4:1-2 **"NOW LISTEN** and give heed, O Israel, to the statutes and ordinances which I teach you, and do them, **that you may live and go in and possess the land which the Lord, the God of your fathers, gives you.** 2 You shall not add to the word which I command you, neither shall you diminish it, that you may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you."

Abuses of the Law ...

In our introduction to this chapter, we quoted a person who believes that the Law doesn't apply to him because, "Ye are not under the law, but under grace" (Romans 6:14). This person is in danger of abusing the Law and failing to mature in his walk after Messiah Y'shua [Jesus]. He could go to either of the following extremes:

- ⇒ The "Libertarian" feels totally free of any restraint. He is free to indulge himself anyway and at anytime that he wants. There are no consequences because he is "under grace – Messiah bought my freedom!". Carnal pleasures of the mind and body occupy his time and energy. He doesn't know what this walk of following after Y'shua [Jesus] is really all about. He doesn't know Y'shua [Jesus] as LORD. He is deceived.
- ⇒ The "Cheap Grace" extreme is similar to the "Libertarian", but also has some differences. He knows that he continually sins, that his decisions are controlled by his flesh, and that he is not advancing in maturity ... he always has another excuse as to why he is not able to take control of his life and become a serious disciple of Y'shua [Jesus]. His "ace in the hole" is his total trust in God's Faithfulness to His Word. He knows that God is "faithful and just" to always forgive us when we confess our sin and ask forgiveness. So, every time he sins, he just asks for forgiveness. It's that simple. Or is it?
- ⇒ The most likely extreme for a person to adopt is to be "indifferent". He doesn't understand the Law/Torah. He doesn't know its purpose, except to give God an opportunity to be upset with the Israelites. He's just glad that Y'shua [Jesus] came and died on the cross, so that he doesn't have to be bothered by the Law. He's glad that he is able to live under the New Testament, where all he has to do is "love everybody".

God's Law IS.

Just as the force of gravity is always in operation, so likewise the laws of the spiritual kingdom are also in operation. They are ALWAYS in operation. God's Law "IS".

The Laws of God operate whether someone is saved or unsaved. He "sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust" (Matthew 5:45). They operate all of the time, day or night, summer or winter.

We can't "break" God's Law. All we can do is *violate* it. The Torah – His Instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of **God's** Will and Intent – remains unbroken. We are the ones *broken* on His Law (Matthew 21:44).

The consequence of violating any part of His Law is built into the universe. The Law contains its own result, just as a seed knows how to grow itself into the correct plant or animal – after it's own kind. God doesn't "push a button" to set the consequence in action. It just starts happening. God doesn't have to pay any attention to it at all. It's just there.

For example, if we get angry at someone and deal with it in a sinful way, there are consequences put into action. There will be a result ... sooner or later.

One last thing ... God has not had a legislative meeting in Heaven and repealed any part of His Law, nor has He added any parts.

God's Torah/Word STANDS.



*Matthew 24:35 "35 Sky and earth will pass away, **but My words will not pass away.**"*

Parallel passages include:

*Mark 13:31 "31 Heaven and earth will perish and pass away, **but My words will not perish or pass away.**"*

*Luke 21:33 "33 The sky and the earth (the universe, the world) will pass away, **but My words will not pass away.**"*

Even though we are in the New Testament period, we cannot ignore the Torah – God's Instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of **God's** Will and Intent.

The Old Testament shows us the Law/Torah, the New Testament clarifies it and modifies some of it for us as believers in Y'shua [Jesus]. We remain subject to it and He expects us to obey it. Being a disciple of Y'shua [Jesus] does not automatically separate us from the consequences of God's Law. Because His Law IS.

How did Y'shua [Jesus] relate to the Torah?

What was Y'shua's [Jesus'] Attitude toward the Torah – God's Instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of HIS Will and Intent? What did He think about it? Was He subject to the Torah [Law] ... or not?

Y'shua [Jesus] speaks in Matthew, saying:

*Matthew 5:17-18 "17 Do not think that I have come to do away with or undo the Torah [Law] or the Prophets; I have come not to do away with or undo **but to complete and fulfill them.** 18 For truly I tell you, until the sky and earth pass away and perish, not one smallest letter nor one little hook [identifying certain Hebrew letters] will pass from the Torah [Law] until all things [it foreshadows] are accomplished."*

Likewise in Luke, Y'shua [Jesus] says,

*Luke 24:44 "44 Then He said to them, This is what I told you while I was still with you: everything which is written concerning Me in the **Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms must be fulfilled.**"*

The Law pointed to Y'shua [Jesus], and He came to fulfill it. He made it clear that the wrap-up of the ages would not occur until all be fulfilled in the Law.

*Luke 16:17 "17 Yet it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away **than for one dot of the Law to fail and become void.**"*

Y'shua's [Jesus'] Heart was not to break, or to be above, nor ignore the Torah [Law], but to fulfill the Torah [Law]. The Life He lived, He lived according to the Torah [Law]. It was a sin-free life, by being obedient in every way to the Father.

He was the sinless, spotless Lamb that met all of the requirements of the Law. He was the Perfect Sacrifice. He was willing to die a painful death in order to fulfill prophecy.

*Matthew 26:53-54 "53 Do you suppose that I cannot appeal to My Father, and He will immediately provide Me with more than twelve legions [more than 80,000] of angels? 54 **But how then would the Scriptures be fulfilled, that it must come about this way?"***

He honored and respected the Torah [Law]. It was His Absolute Standard. His First Coming was a part in fulfilling the Law. Likewise, His Second Coming will be part of the fulfilling the Law.

How does God expect us to relate to the Torah [Law]?

God expects us to LOVING obey and fulfill the Law. We see this in the Sermon on the Mountain, in all of the Beatitudes, and all of the Commandments Y'shua [Jesus] gives us.

Y'shua [Jesus] says in Matthew:

*Matthew 5:19 "19 Whoever then breaks or does away with or relaxes one of the least [important] of these commandments and teaches men so shall be called least [important] in the kingdom of heaven, **but he who practices them and teaches others to do so shall be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven.**"*

Y'shua [Jesus] gives us a clear admonishment to not break the Commandments, nor to teach others to do so. We are to loving obey the Torah [Law] of God, to do the Instructions of God, so that we are in alignment with God and Messiah in fulfilling all that He wants us to do. We obey out of LOVE!

Results of violating God's Torah [Law] ...

If we – and our ancestors – had not violated the Law of God, there is a possibility we would not have any problems. Isn't that an amazing thought? We wouldn't need others to pray with us! But in reality, the reason we need ministry, whether formal counseling or not, is that we and our ancestors DID and are violating the Law of God. When people come for counseling, we should be asking, "How are they living contrary to the Torah [Law] of God – His Instruction, Teaching, the Revelation of **God's** Will and Intent?"

When we violate God's Torah [Law], several things begin to happen. There are CONSEQUENCES.



- Natural consequences activated.

An "effect" goes out from us and triggers, or sets in motion, the natural consequence. We discussed this earlier in "God's Law IS," making the point that the consequences are "built in" to the Torah [Law]. The consequence might be minor or major, a nuisance or a calamity, depending on whether we are activating blessings or cursing, whether we are being obedient or in rebellion.

- Pain.

One consequence seems to almost always occur – PAIN. People come for counseling because they are in pain. Turmoil, confusion, torment, guilt, shame, anger ... the list goes on and on. Pain drives us to God. Y'shua [Jesus] promises SHALOM [peace] – peace that is not understood (John 14:27; Philippians 4:7). Receiving God's Shalom [Peace] is conditional upon doing things God's Way.

- Spiritual separation.

A very important consequence is a spiritual SEPARATION from God.

*Isaiah 59:2 "2 But your iniquities have made a separation between you and your God, and **your sins have hidden His face from you, so that He will not hear.**"*

Even for believers, when we sin, there is a degree of separation that occurs. How much and for how long depends on many factors. God's Father Heart has provided a way for the separation to be rectified, reconciled, and ended.

- Give "Place".

Unfortunately, when we sin, we give legal opportunity for demonic oppression. In Ephesians, Paul shows this clearly when he writes:

*Ephesians 4:26-27 "26 When angry, do not sin; do not ever let your wrath (your exasperation, your fury or indignation) last until the sun goes down. 27 **Leave no [such] room or foothold for the devil [give no opportunity to him].**"*

A "place" is like legal ground. It is an "inhabited" space, a snare. Other Scriptures expressing this concept are 2 Corinthians 2:11 and 2 Timothy 2:26.

In Proverbs we have an interesting little verse.

*Proverbs 26:2 "2 Like the sparrow in her wandering, like the swallow in her flying, **so the causeless curse does not alight.**"*

This verse shows that an "undeserved" [KJV has "causeless"] curse cannot find a place to "rest", or land. It has "no place". On the other hand, when we or our ancestors sin, we give a "place". Satan uses these opportunities to do his work of stealing, killing and destroying (John 10:10).

During this “*Journey2Freedom*” series, we want to explore to find those places that have given opportunity for curses and demonic oppression, and then to bring God's Healing, VICTORY, and Freedom.

Solution for violating God's Torah [Law] . . .

The only difference between believers in Y'shua [Jesus] and the rest of the world is that we have a remedy when we break God's Law, and we have the choice of allowing the Holy Spirit help us not break God's Law.



When a non-believer breaks the Law and experiences the consequences, he gets more and more burdened and oppressed. He has no way to get free of the load. Believers do not necessarily escape the consequences – depending on the type of consequences and how rapidly they respond – but we do have a solution for the penalty that comes from breaking the Law.

The fundamental place to receive help is the CROSS of Messiah. Let us just add here that the cross is the place of judgment. Here is where the consequences of all of the violations of God's Torah [Law] were poured out on One Man, the Man Y'shua [Jesus].

This is one of the main reasons that He came, to save us from the judgments of the Law, such as "an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth", and so forth. When we receive Y'shua [Jesus], the Anointed One, as our Messiah and Savior, we are in a position to receive His substitutional carrying of the judgments due us.

Being saved from the judgments of God does not usually happen automatically. We have to know God's Remedy. We have to receive it by FAITH, and we must meet God's Conditions.

It is interesting that the Torah [Law] contains within itself the provisions for getting free from the Law! Isn't that fascinating? The very thing that draws the line and states, "On this side of the line is sin, on this other side is obedience" also contains the promises that point the way out of the trap (curse) of violating the Law.

These are the promises that show us how to be saved and legally have our citizenship transferred to the Kingdom of God. These are the promises for healing.

There is one catch though. These are all conditional promises. In these promises, God says, "If you will do THAT, I will do THIS". They all have what we call the "If Then" clauses.

We must **appropriate** Messiah's redeeming work on the cross because it made the way possible for us to "enter into" God's Promises and Covenant. The key point in every case will be, are we willing to meet God's Condition?

Let us give you one very important example. Let's look at God's Conditional promise in First John. John writes,

*1 John 1:9 "9 If we [freely] admit that we have sinned and confess our sins, **He is faithful and just (true to His own nature and promises) and will forgive our sins [dismiss our lawlessness] and [continuously] cleanse us from all unrighteousness [everything not in conformity to His will in purpose, thought, and action]."***

When and if we do our part – confess our sins – God will do His part – forgive us and cleanse us from the resulting unrighteousness, because He is Faithful and Just.

Specific laws relevant to counseling-therapy ...

There are a number of laws that are relevant. They can affect us spiritually, both negatively and positively. The Holy Spirit is calling us to "go with the flow", that is go with God's Laws, be in harmony with God's Torah, so that we may LIVE – that His Instructions may work to our benefit rather than to our detriment.

The laws that we want to include in this discussion are:

- Sowing and reaping,
- Multiplication,
- Time to harvest,
- Believing in your heart.

These laws are all intimately interrelated and are all operating at the same time. They have a combined impact. But we will look at them one at a time.

- *Sowing and reaping.*

In Genesis 1, God declared that everything was to reproduce after its own kind. The basic principle is that living "things" will produce seed that has all of the information needed to bring forth a harvest of like "things".



When seed is planted, it normally sprouts and grows in a mature plant, producing a harvest. If the soil is bad, fertilizer is lacking and water is unavailable, there may be a stunted crop, or even a crop failure. But normally, in God's Kingdom there is a harvest. If the seed is planted in good soil, a harvest of thirty, sixty, or even a hundred-fold is possible (Mark 4:20). This principle is not restricted to the physical. This is a general law that is valid at all levels: at the spiritual level, the soulish level, as well as at the physical level.

In Galatians, Paul declares this for us.

*Galatians 6:7-8 "7 Do not be deceived and deluded and misled; **God will not allow Himself to be sneered at** (scorned, disdained, or mocked by mere pretensions or professions, or by His precepts being set aside.) [He inevitably deludes himself who attempts to delude God.] **For whatever a man sows, that and that only is what he will reap.** 8 For he who sows to his own flesh (lower nature, sensuality) will from the flesh reap decay and ruin and destruction, but he who sows to the Spirit will from the Spirit reap eternal life."*

Paul says, "Do not be deceived". Don't be confused about this, don't be mistaken, this is reality. God's Kingdom is such that wherever we plant our seed, that's where we will reap the harvest. Whatever type of seed is planted, in general, that is what we will get in return. In Exodus, we read the Law of Retribution, which follows the principle of "like" resulting in "like".

*Exodus 21:23-25 “23 But if any damage follows, **then you shall give life for life, 24 Eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, 25 Burn for burn, wound for wound, and lash for lash.**”*

Other Scriptures setting forth this same principle include Matthew 7:1 – “Judge not, that you be not judged” – Romans 2:1-3, and:

*Isaiah 3:10-11 “10 Say to the righteous that it shall be well with them, **for they shall eat the fruit of their deeds.** 11 Woe to the wicked! It shall be ill with them, **for what their hands have done shall be done to them.**”*

If we sow wicked seed, we will receive a wicked harvest.

The Laws of Sowing and Reaping, of Retribution, of Judging, are still in operation today. If we get angry and blast someone, we plant seeds of anger in the soulish realm and the spiritual realm. We are setting ourselves up to receive a harvest of anger coming back at us.

If we say, "My dad is just a horrible guy who beat me up all the time ... he is no good", we have judged our father, and set the stage to enter into the same sins and to receive that same kind of judgment. In families of alcoholics, the children are likely to say, "I will never be like my dad (or mom)". They usually become alcoholics as well, as a resulting of planting judging seeds and then reaping.

The Law of Sowing and Reaping is a wonderful Law, if used to plant Godly Seeds. But it is so universal in function that it can work against us when we are un-Godly in any realm.

Be sensitive to this Law in your life. It can be the source of much trouble. But all consequences of violating God's Law of Sowing and Reaping can be taken to the cross, where the action of the harvest can frequently be stopped, even when it has been continuously increasing.

• *The Law of Multiplication.*

God has designed a seed so that it reproduces after its own kind. He has also designed a seed to produce a plant or animal capable of producing many more seeds, capable of multiplication. God seems to always want increase, more fruit, more sons, INCREASE (John 15:8). God is the God of multiplication.

So, as the cycle of planting, harvesting, planting again, and harvesting again, continues, there should be a surplus of seed each time. This seems to be true for every type of seed, whether soulish or spiritual seeds, whether the seeds are positive (Godly) or negative (un-Godly).

As with a natural crop, where the actual yield depends on many factors such as rainfall, soil quality, sunshine, and so forth, the actual yield from soulish and spiritual seeds can vary greatly, depending on the conditions.

Unfortunately, it seems we can have more faith for negative seeds than we can for positive seeds. It seems that we go back to, and "think again" about our fears and worries, about our "what if's". It's easier to have fear and the expectation of bad things happening than it is for good things happening. So our harvest of negative seeds frequently is greater than from our positive seed planting.

This is why having our ***minds renewed*** is important and why we go into such depth in studying how these Laws relate to strongholds of the mind. We want to help you stop the planting of negative seeds and accelerate the planting and multiplication of positive, Godly seeds. We want the yield in the parable of the sower to be good fruit.

*Mark 4:20 "20 And those **sown on the good** (well-adapted) soil are the ones who hear the Word and receive and accept and welcome it and bear fruit—**some thirty times as much as was sown, some sixty times as much, and some [even] a hundred times as much.**"*

It takes faith to carry us through the transition time, the time to harvest, because we have the old, negative seed being harvested while the new crop is developing.

- *The time to harvest.*



It takes time between planting a seed and reaping the harvest from that seed, sometimes a short and sometimes a long time. It takes about nine months for humans to have a baby. It takes two years for elephants to have their babies. In Genesis we read:

*Genesis 8:22 "22 While the earth remains, **seedtime and harvest, cold and heat, summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.**"*

God says that there is a rhythm, there is a cycle, there is an elapse of time between seedtime and harvest.

*Ecclesiastes 11:1 “1 CAST YOUR bread upon the waters, **for you will find it after many days.**”*

*Galatians 6:9 “9 And let us not lose heart and grow weary and faint in acting nobly and doing right, **for in due time and at the appointed season we shall reap**, if we do not loosen and relax our courage and faint.”*

*Hebrews 6:12 “12 In order that you may not grow disinterested and become [spiritual] sluggards, but imitators, behaving as do those who through faith (by their leaning of the entire personality on God in Christ in absolute trust and confidence in His power, wisdom, and goodness) and **by practice of patient endurance and waiting are [now] inheriting the promises.**”*

Each of these verses emphasizes the time requirement.

The Hebrews passage is particularly hard for those of us who are "now faith" people. We don't like the word "patience". We want what we are "believing for" NOW, not later, not needing to use patience.

Well, faith is "now," but there is still a time to harvest. Abraham never saw the fulfillment of many of the promises God gave him, but his descendants did, and even we, as his spiritual descendants, benefit from his promises.

As we change our un-Godly beliefs into Godly beliefs, we need to allow a time before the new harvest comes. If we continue to work with the Godly beliefs, good seeds will be planted and things will begin to change.

- *Believing in your heart.*

This Law is the first three Laws already mentioned all wrapped up into one. To illustrate this Law, we will go to Mark, where God has given us a key verse for this Law. When we receive the revelation(s) contained in this verse, and how it relates to all realms of life, we will have received a tremendous revelation.

*Mark 11:22-24 “22 And Jesus, replying, said to them, Have faith in God [constantly]. 23 Truly I tell you, whoever says to this mountain, Be lifted up and thrown into the sea! and does not doubt at all in his heart but believes that what he says will take place, it will be done for him. 24 **For this reason I am telling you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe (trust and be confident) that it is granted to you, and you will [get it].**”*

In Mark 11:23, Y'shua [Jesus] is stating a general spiritual principle. We know that, because verse 11:24 starts with "therefore", indicating that a conclusion is about to be made from the general principle just stated.

Y'shua [Jesus] says that "anyone" – or in the KJV "whosoever" – who can "say", "not doubt", and "believe", will thereby receive what he said. "Anyone" includes saved or unsaved, worthy or unworthy, righteous or unrighteous. It doesn't matter.

Anyone, whosoever, including you and I, can receive what we say if we don't doubt in our heart. Again, unfortunately, we seem to do better with this Law in the negative, un-Godly realm than in the positive, Godly realm.

For example, if we believe in our heart that we are no good, that we will be rejected, that everyone hates us, that we will be abandoned, and that no one is ever going to relate to us in any positive kind of way; and, if we believe hundred percent and have great faith (fear) for this, "it will be done for "us" (him)". In other words, we will receive the negative things that we are "believing for", even if we really don't want them!

Those things that we "believe in our heart" do come out of our mouths! As Y'shua [Jesus] said:

*Matthew 15:18 "18 **But whatever comes out of the mouth comes from the heart, and this is what makes a man unclean and defiles [him].**"*



This fact provides another motivation to have our hearts healed, so we can speak out of a healthy heart rather than a sick one. We don't want to defile ourselves any more than we already have; we don't want to plant any more of the wrong kind of seeds.

Let's look once more at "what we say". Even if we don't actually speak out what is in our heart, when we think a thought repeatedly, such as "I'm just a rejected person", the circulating thoughts can plant seeds and build an expectancy just as much as if we actually said the words out loud.

This expectancy will eventually bring forth a harvest. We want to help you identify and understand the negative things (strongholds) that are in your mind, so that God's Solution for violating His Law can be brought to bear on the problem. We can help you bring to a stop what you do not want in your life.

In verse 24, Y'shua [Jesus] draws the conclusion that we should apply the general spiritual principle for Godly, positive results. He is indicating that we should apply the Law to the things that God puts on our hearts to pray for. He is encouraging us to be wise and apply God's Laws in a way that furthers the Kingdom, furthers the blessings, and furthers the promises that He has made available to us.

Be wise, don't do it the old way, the worldly way, the "before we got saved way", when you operated out soulish hurts and unrenewed minds. Apply the keys that He has given us and get free!

Psalm 19:7-14 “7 The **Torah [Law] of the Lord is perfect, restoring the [whole] person**; the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple. 8 The precepts of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the Lord is pure and bright, enlightening the eyes. 9 The [reverent] **fear of the Lord is clean, enduring forever**; the ordinances of the Lord are true and righteous altogether. 10 More to be desired are they than gold, even than much fine gold; **they are sweeter also than honey and drippings from the honeycomb**. 11 Moreover, by them is Your servant warned (reminded, illuminated, and instructed); and in keeping them there is great reward. 12 Who can discern his lapses and errors? Clear me from hidden [and unconscious] faults. 13 **Keep back Your servant also from presumptuous sins; let them not have dominion over me!** Then shall I be blameless, and I shall be innocent and clear of great transgression. 14 **Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in Your sight, O Lord, my [firm, impenetrable] Rock and my Redeemer.**”



Part I:
The position of
the Body of
Messiah in the
world

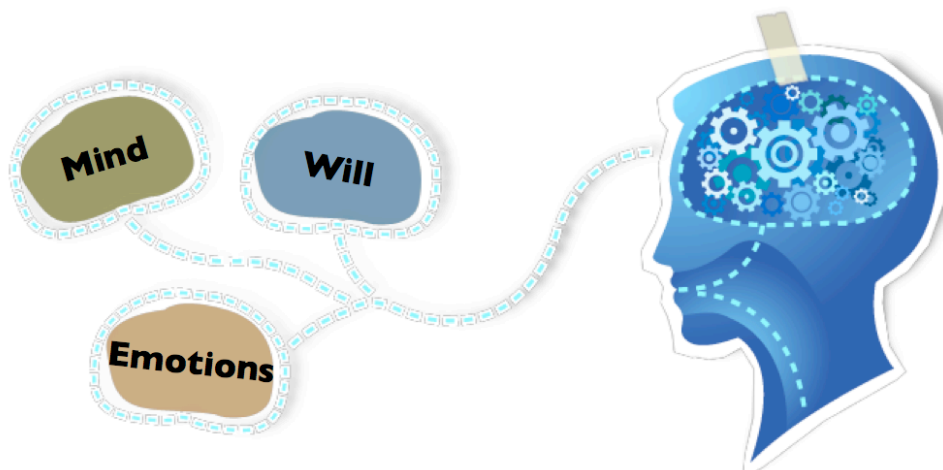
The position of the Body of Messiah in the world ...

What happens the instant we are saved by Y'shua [Jesus]? At our conversion?

		
Spirit	Soul	Body
Our spirit is BORN AGAIN and made new!	Our soul is still in “darkness” and must be renewed by the Truth and washing of the Word. [James 1:21]	Although our bodies are healed and kept in health by the Wounds of Y'shua [Jesus], they are only TEMPORARY dwellings.

This series is about taking back and possessing our “land” of the spirit and soul, bring restoration. This possessing our land is a process, the journey of sanctification.

As we have learnt, we are made up of three parts: body, soul, and spirit. Our soul consists of three parts: mind, will, and emotions.



After rebirth you still have the same unrenewed mind – your thoughts are a product of past experiences. We are all controlled by our thoughts – which we call strongholds.

*Proverbs 23:7 “7 **For as he thinks in his heart**, so is he. As one who reckons, he says to you, eat and drink, yet his heart is not with you [but is grudging the cost].”*

You can be subject to patterns of behavior – these are thought patterns in your mind. Examples include rejection, fears, addiction, pills, strife, and so forth.

In this “*Journey2Freedom*” series, you must take your mind back from the enemy. You need to heal the emotions that were wounded by bruises from your past. And you need to get deliverance from a passive will that is bound in so many areas ... you need to be taught to resist and stand up and FIGHT!

*James 4:7 “7 So be subject to God. **Resist the devil** [stand firm against him], and he will flee from you.”*

You must KNOW the enemy, know his weapons, and know his tactics to be able to fight back! Do not be willing to live in defeat any longer!

The problem with today's believers ...

The main problem in the Body of Messiah is an attitude of **passiveness** in spite of all the attacks of the enemy. So many of us are like the Egyptians back in the days of Moses. We have “frogs” – demonic oppression, curses, disease, sickness, and so forth – running around in every nook and cranny of our lives, and yet we remain passive and “comfortable”. When Moses asks pharaoh when he would like the plague to be stopped ... Pharaoh answers, “TOMORROW”!



*Exodus 8:8-10 “8 Then Pharaoh called for Moses and Aaron, and said, Entreat the Lord, that He may take away the frogs from me and my people; and I will let the people go that they may sacrifice to the Lord. 9 Moses said to Pharaoh, Glory over me in this: dictate when I shall pray [to the Lord] for you, your servants, and your people, that the frogs may be destroyed from you and your houses and remain only in the river. 10 And [Pharaoh] said, **Tomorrow.** [Moses] said, Let it be as you say, that you may know that there is no one like the Lord our God.”*

Are you ready to get rid of the “frogs” of your life? Or content to wait until “tomorrow”, somewhere down the line?

God's children live their lives on a much lower level than what God has intended for them, they suffer under the bondages of the enemy instead of experiencing the wonderful freedom of the Holy Spirit. A person with a passive attitude will never conquer and take possession of his inheritance. The Kingdom of God is confirmed by a principle of confrontation. The devil is only moved by a power stronger than himself.

In this manual, you will discover how to wage war against the enemy – to reach out to break down strongholds in your life, so that you will be established as an overcomer, a redeemed and powerful child of God.

*Deuteronomy 1:8 “8 Behold, **I have set the land before you; go in and take possession of the land** which the Lord swore to your fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give to them and to their descendants after them.”*

*Luke 16:16 “16 Until John came, there were the Law and the Prophets; since then the good news (the Gospel) of the kingdom of God is being preached, and **everyone strives violently to go in [would force his own way rather than God's way into it].**”*

*Deuteronomy 2:24 “24 **Rise up, take your journey,** and pass over the Valley of the Arnon. Behold, I have given into your hand Sihon the Amorite, king of Heshbon, and his land; begin to possess it and contend with him in battle.”*

*Matthew 11:12 “12 And from the days of John the Baptist until the present time, the Kingdom of Heaven has endured violent assault, and **violent men seize it by force [as a precious prize—a share in the heavenly kingdom is sought with most ardent zeal and intense exertion].**”*

Remember, the Old Testament was written as an example and warning for us. As such, we will be using many examples from the Books of the Old Testament – particularly the Books [the Torah] dealing with Israel's journey out from Egypt and into the Promised Land.

*1 Corinthians 10:6-7 “6 Now these things are examples (warnings and admonitions) for us not to desire or crave or covet or lust after evil and carnal things as they did. [Num. 11:4, 34.] 7 **Do not be worshipers of false gods** as some of them were, as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink [the sacrifices offered to the golden calf at Horeb] and rose to sport (to dance and give way to jesting and hilarity). [Exod. 32:4, 6.]”*

What has been given to you is not automatically yours. Y'shua [Jesus] died for the whole world ... but not everybody is saved. The "abundant life" is not automatic.

John 10:10 "10 The thief comes only in order to steal and kill and destroy. I came that they may have and enjoy life, and have it in abundance (to the full, till it overflows)."

Confrontation.

There are only three ways people typically react to the need to fight:

Only SPY out the enemy, never actually fighting.	Just keep sleeping ...	OR stand up and FIGHT!
		

We need to make the decision to become ACTIVE in this walk and to FIGHT!

- The land will not be taken into possession without a fight/battle against the giants and strongmen.
- The Kingdom of God will only be established through confrontation.
- Y'shua [Jesus] healed the sick and expelled demons. He confronted the kingdom of darkness.
- Every believer is an extension of the Kingdom of God. You cannot AWOL. You do not volunteer. It is compulsory.

Are you a prisoner of war ... or a soldier of the light?

- The Kingdom is birthed by force (Matthew 11:12; Luke 16.16).
- The enemy works and confirms his strongholds in darkness. His works must be exposed and confronted.



- Important note, every time there is a confrontation of kingdoms, God's Kingdom **ALWAYS** wins. Resist in His Power.
- The land of victory – the promised land of inheritance in Messiah – you will enter into only with a fight!

There are only three ways people typically react to the need to fight ...

God's Will is the **BEST** Land.

God promised the Land of Canaan to Israel, promised them victory over the giants and strongholds ... but they still had to fight for it!

*Deuteronomy 1:8 "8 Behold, I have set the land before you; **go in and take possession of the land** which the Lord swore to your fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give to them and to their descendants after them."*

Did you know Y'shua [Jesus] is our spiritual "Joshua"? In fact, the name Joshua means "savior and deliverer". It was under Joshua's authority that the powers of the principalities were broken.

*Joshua 11:23 "23 So **Joshua took the whole land**, according to all that the Lord had spoken to Moses, and Joshua gave it for an inheritance to Israel according to their allotments by tribes. And the land had rest from war."*

Joshua 12:24 “24 The king of Tirzah, one. In all, thirty-one kings.”

In the above passages we see that thirty-one kings were conquered together with many inhabitants.

Messiah Yshua [Jesus] has broken the power of satan over us!

Colossians 1:13 “13 [The Father] has delivered and drawn us to Himself out of the control and the dominion of darkness and has **transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of His love,**”

Colossians 2:15 “15 [God] disarmed the principalities and powers that were ranged against us and made a bold display and public example of them, in **triumphing over them in Him and in it [the cross].**”

1 John 3:8 “8 [But] he who commits sin [who practices evil] is of the devil [takes his character from the evil one], for the devil has sinned (violated the divine law) from the beginning. **The reason the Son of God was made manifest (visible) was to undo (destroy, loosen, and dissolve) the works the devil [has done].**”

Conflict.

We must deal with the presence of the enemy! Sadly, we learn from the Scriptures that Israel⁴ did not heed the Commandments of the LORD and did not take possession of the whole Land promised to them (Judges 1:19, 21, 24, 27, 28).

What was the result of Israel's passivity and disobedience? The inhabitants of the Land that were not destroyed by Israel became thorns in their flesh – even until today!

As believers we must learn a very valuable lesson ... we have to get rid of ALL the traces of the enemy – ALL the “frogs” in our lives! We must deal with ALL the words of the enemy in our:

- Spirit,
- Mind,
- Will,
- Emotions,
- And body.



Always REMEMBER, you will never be so spiritual that you won't have to fight! Our walk and journey is that of warfare.

⁴ It is interesting to note, that none of the Tribes – except for Judah – obeyed the LORD in taking full possession of their allotted inheritance.

We have to learn to deal with a kingdom that has been established for around six thousand years. What has been given to us as our inheritance in Messiah must be taken into POSSESSION ... this is a command!

*Judges 3:1-4 “NOW THESE are the nations which the Lord left to prove Israel by them, that is, all in Israel who had not previously experienced war in Canaan; 2 **It was only that the generations of the Israelites might know and be taught war**, at least those who previously knew nothing of it. 3 The remaining nations are: the five lords of the Philistines, all the Canaanites, the Sidonians, and the Hivites who dwelt on Mount Lebanon from Mount Baal-hermon to the entrance of Hamath. 4 **They were for the testing and proving of Israel to know whether Israel would listen and obey the commandments of the Lord, which He commanded their fathers by Moses.**”*

What do we learn from this Scripture? Israel's enemies were to teach them warfare and would Israel LISTEN and OBEY God's commandments! Joshua deals with the TOP structure of the KINGS ruling in Canaan. The Tribes who went in to possess the land had to deal with the presence of the enemy.

WARNING! 2½ of the Tribes⁵ decided not to enter the Promised Land! They were happy to just stand and look at the Land of Milk and Honey!



The parallel in the New Testament is that Y'shua [Jesus] has conquered the top structure – satan and his kingdom – but He tells us we are to deal with the presence of the enemy still occupying our promised land!

*Matthew 28:18,20 “18 Jesus approached and, breaking the silence, said to them, All authority (all power of rule) in heaven and on earth has been given to Me. 20 **Teaching them to observe everything that I have commanded you**, and behold, I am with you all the days (perpetually, uniformly, and on every occasion), to the [very] close and consummation of the age. Amen (so let it be).”*

⁵ For additional study, see our “Warrior Bride” series.

In this warfare, we have been given armor.

*Ephesians 6:10-12 “10 In conclusion, **be strong in the Lord** [be empowered through your union with Him]; draw your strength from Him [that strength which His boundless might provides]. 11 **Put on God’s whole armor** [the armor of a heavy-armed soldier which God supplies], that you may be able **successfully to stand up against** [all] the strategies and the deceits of the devil. 12 For we are not wrestling with flesh and blood [contending only with physical opponents], but against the despotisms, against the powers, against [the master spirits who are] the world rulers of this present darkness, against the spirit forces of wickedness in the heavenly (supernatural) sphere.”*

We see the parallel between Judges 3 and Ephesians 6:

Judges 3	Ephesians 6
Five Philistine Lords	Principalities
Canaanites	Powers
Sidonians	Rulers of Darkness
Hivites	Evil Spirits

WE ARE IN WARFARE!



*2 Corinthians 10:3-4 “3 For though we walk (live) in the flesh, we are not carrying on our warfare according to the flesh and using mere human weapons. 4 **For the weapons of our warfare are not physical [weapons of flesh and blood]**, but they are mighty before God for the overthrow and destruction of strongholds,”*

How can we deny the fact that we are in war? The TRUTH is the basis of deliverance.

*John 8:32 “32 And you will know the Truth, and the **Truth will set you free.**”*

TRUTH – God’s Word – is our solid foundation. Satan is a liar and functions on the principle of deception.

*John 8:44 “44 You are of your father, the devil, and it is your will to practice the lusts and gratify the desires [which are characteristic] of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning and **does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him.** When he speaks a falsehood, he speaks what is natural to him, for he is a liar [himself] and **the father of lies and of all that is false.**”*

*2 Corinthians 11:3 “3 But [now] I am fearful, lest that even as the **serpent beguiled Eve by his cunning**, so your minds may be corrupted and seduced from wholehearted and sincere and pure devotion to Christ. [Gen. 3:4.]”*

Ignorance concerning satan is not “spirituality”.

*Hosea 4:6 “6 **My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge**; because you [the priestly nation] have **rejected** knowledge, I will also reject you that you shall be no priest to Me; seeing you have forgotten the law of your God, I will also forget your children.”*

*2 Corinthians 2:11 “11 To keep Satan from getting the advantage over us; **for we are not ignorant of his wiles and intentions.**”*

Do not think you are so spiritual that you will not have to fight. Decide with your will to fight, then God’s Power is immediately there to carry you through.

Do you know that there is a curse on those who do not do spiritual warfare?

*Jeremiah 48:10 “10 **Cursed be he who does the work of the Lord negligently** [with slackness, deceitfully]; and **cursed be he who keeps back his sword from blood** [in executing judgment pronounced by the Lord].”*

Satan will challenge the believer, but:

- His works must be opposed by a Stronger Power – Y’shua [Jesus].
- The cross is the focal point of satan’s defeat.
- His works must be destroyed and his presence must be driven out.

Every battle is entered into with one word ...

VICTORY!

Part 2:

The hierarchy of darkness

The hierarchy of darkness.

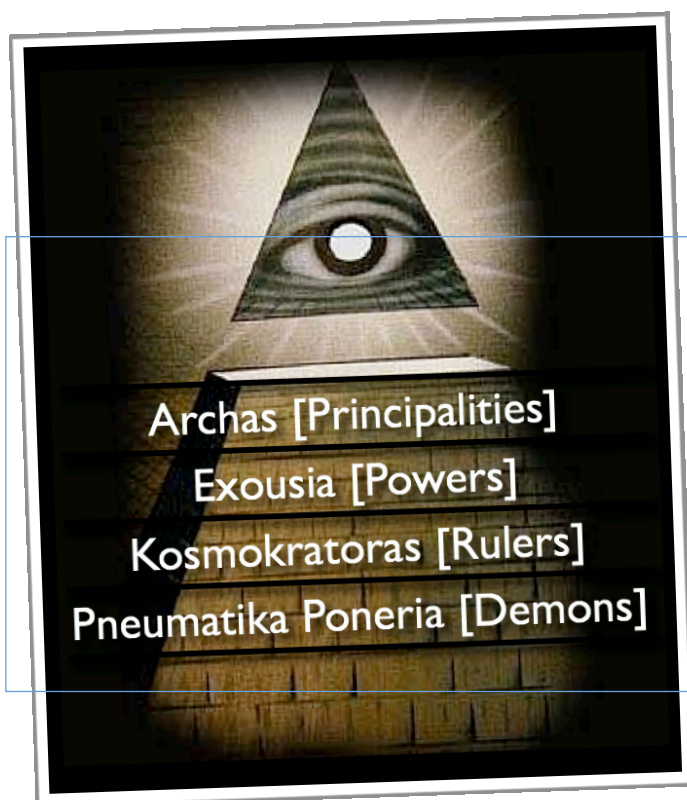
WE ARE CALLED TO POSSESS THE LAND!

Israel was led out of Egypt ... they received the promises of a Land of milk and honey, BUT they still had to FIGHT for it to TEST and to PROVE their obedience to God's Commandments.

They could have stayed at the river edge and cried: "Oh God, we want what is in Canaan", but they could have been too afraid to cross over and FIGHT!⁶ If they did not believe in God's Promise of VICTORY, Israel would never have entered into the Promised Land.

An aggressive follower of Messiah will confront a spiritual kingdom – a hierarchy of darkness under leadership of satan. The believer must not only stand up to satan, but must rule with Messiah in the midst of His enemies.

Psalm 110:2 "2 The Lord will send forth from Zion the scepter of Your strength; rule, then, in the midst of Your foes. [Rom. 11:26, 27.]"



We need to fully understand the following Scripture – that the kingdom of darkness is organized, has levels and ranks, and operates in a definite hierarchical structure.

*Ephesians 6:12 "12 For we are not wrestling with flesh and blood [contending only with physical opponents], but against the despotisms (**PRINCIPALITIES**), against the powers (**POWERS**), against [the master spirits who are] the world rulers of this present darkness (**WORLD RULERS OF DARKNESS**), against the spirit forces of wickedness in the heavenly (supernatural) sphere (**EVIL SPIRITS IN THE AIR**)."*

The main purpose of the kingdom of darkness is to stop, hinder, and keep in bondage God's people so that we never come to FULLNESS, and are not able to shine and reveal the Light of the Good News. Satan's kingdom is working at this in FULL FORCE – at all cost.

⁶ Remember, Israel had to learn this lesson the hard way ... they were brought to the Land, saw that it was good, but retreated in FEAR. They did not believe God's Promises of victory over the giants. For this, that generation wandered forty years in the desert, and never entered the Land.

Let's look at the various ranks of the kingdom of darkness, starting at the "top" and working our way down.

1. Principalities **ARCHAS**.

This rank is "number one". Principalities are the "first ones, the most excellent cabinet" in the kingdom of darkness. The word ARCHAS is defined as: "a person or thing that goes before, the first person or thing in a series, the leader". The singular form of this word is ARCHAN. We see this word used in the following Scriptures:

*Ephesians 2:2 "2 In which at one time you walked [habitually]. You were following the course and fashion of this world [were under the sway of the tendency of this present age], following the **prince (ARCHAN) of the power of the air**. [You were obedient to and under the control of] the [demon] spirit that still constantly works in the sons of disobedience [the careless, the rebellious, and the unbelieving, who go against the purposes of God]."*

Obviously, satan himself is the "archan" of the kingdom of darkness. With him is the group of "leaders" [principalities] referred to as "archas".

Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28 teaches us about the rebellion in Heaven where one third of the angels were cast out of Heaven. This rebellion against God was led by satan. The following verses are more references to the understanding of principalities:

*Ephesians 1:21 "21 **Far above all rule and authority and power and dominion and every name that is named** [above every title that can be conferred], not only in this age and in this world, but also in the age and the world which are to come."*

*Ephesians 3:10 "10 [The purpose is] that through the church the complicated, many-sided wisdom of God in all its infinite variety and innumerable aspects might **now be made known to the angelic rulers and authorities (principalities and powers) in the heavenly sphere.**"*

*1 Corinthians 15:24 "24 After that comes the end (the completion), when He delivers over the kingdom to God the Father **after rendering inoperative and abolishing every [other] rule and every authority and power.**"*

Gateways in the Spirit

Every country, city, area, home, and/or person has gateways⁷ where demons can gain entrance to. Whoever sits in the gates controls that city, area, home, and so forth. Government and justice was administered from the gates.

Applying these principles to the spiritual realm, we learn that these are the places where issues concerning salvation, deliverance, and healing are decided.

⁷ The physical gateways of cities/nations are harbors, airports, incoming highways, and so forth.

Cape Town is the Gateway to Africa in the South. The calling of the Body of Messiah is to position Herself in the gates of the nation!

What happened in the HISTORY of the gates of Cape Town?



What is happening at the gates of Cape Town NOW?



What happens at the end of time?⁸

*1 Corinthians 15:24 “24 After that comes the end (the completion), **when He delivers over the kingdom to God the Father** after rendering inoperative and abolishing every [other] rule and every authority and power.”*

2. Powers EXOUSIA.

This is the next rank down from the principalities. EXOUSIA is defined as: “power to rule, power exercised by leaders or others in high positions because of the tasks they perform”. These leaders are like the “parliament” – they have the power to rule and reign. At this level, they make plans that affect every individual – an example in modern terms would be the implication of speed limits.

This same word is also used in other places in Scripture⁹, but it does not always refer to the kingdom of darkness, but also to governmental powers in the earth.

3. Rulers KOSMOKRATORAS

This is the third level down – these are the world rulers of darkness. KOSMOKRATORAS is defined as: “master spirits who are the rulers of this present darkness”. This refers directly to spiritual princes who rule over the nations. Every nation has a ruling spirit – a prince – that expands and furthers the kingdom of darkness. It is always characterized by evil works.

*Daniel 10:12-13 “12 Then he said to me, Fear not, Daniel, for from the first day that you set your mind and heart to understand and to humble yourself before your God, your words were heard, and I have come as a consequence of [and in response to] your words. 13 **But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me for twenty-one days.** Then Michael, one of the chief [of the celestial] princes, came to help me, for I remained there with the kings of Persia.”*

For example, the demonic prince ruling over Asia and the Middle East manifests himself in Islam. In Europe, we have the strongman of humanism and philosophies. Cape Town is known as the gay capital of South Africa – the ruler of the city is manifesting himself in homosexuality.

4. Spirits PNEUMATIKA PONERIA

This is the fourth and “bottom” rank of the kingdom of darkness. PNEUMATIKA PONERIA is defined as: “spiritual powers that are evil and live in the atmosphere above the earth”.

⁸ Other Scripture references include Romans 8:38; Ephesians 6:12; Colossians 1:16, 2:10, 2:15; and Titus 3:1.

⁹ References include 1 Corinthians 15:24; Ephesians 1:21, 2:2, 3:10, 6:12; Colossians 1:13, 1:16, 2:10, 2:15; Titus 3:1; 1 Peter 3:22.



Note! This is the strongest and most powerful word for evil. It means to defile all flesh. It refers to the scattering of evil spirits among mankind, known as demons. They work on specific strategies to try and cause each believer to fall. For instance, they might use the setting a sexual trap in order to cause you to fall. You think your battle is “normal” until you find out the truth – that it is actually a very well planned strategy against you.

References include Ephesians 3:10 and 6:12.

Most of our warfare will be involved in this rank – against demonic and evil spirits¹⁰. As such, we must understand the nature of demons, and how they operate.

The nature of demons.

1. Demons are mainly **spiritual beings and are defined as such.**

There are two references to demons in Old Testament. The Hebrew word is SHEDHIM, which can refer to demons or idols.

*Deuteronomy 32:17 “17 They **sacrificed to demons, not to God**—to gods whom they knew not, to new gods lately come up, whom your fathers never knew or feared.”*

*Psalms 106:36, 37 “36 And **served their idols**, which were a snare to them. 37 Yes, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters to **demons**”*

In the Old Testament we see the activities of demons in idol worship. Note, there is a demon behind every idol, no matter the religion – Hindu, Roman Catholicism, and so forth. There is also reference to the “hairy one”, the goat, the devil of the “veld”. The Hebrew word is SEIVIM.

*Leviticus 17:7 “7 So they shall no more offer their sacrifices to **goatlike gods or demons or field spirits** after which they have played the harlot. This shall be a statute forever to them throughout their generations.”*

¹⁰ For additional study, we recommend Derek Prince’s book “*They Shall Expel Demons*”.

2 Chronicles 11:15 “15 And he appointed his own priests for the high places and for **the [idols of demon] he-goats, and calves he had made.** [1 Kings 12:28.]”

How disturbing that congregations came together to worship demons! Many of the kingdoms that followed after these demon-gods were abominable, beastly, and detestable.

In the New Testament, demons are referred to as:

- Devils – the Greek word is “*diamonian*”.

1 Corinthians 10:20 “20 No, I am suggesting that what the pagans sacrifice they offer [in effect] to **demons** (to evil spiritual powers) and not to God [at all]. I do not want you to fellowship and be partners with **diabolical spirits** [by eating at their feasts]. [Deut. 32:17.]”

- Unclean spirits.

Mark 1:27 “27 And they were all so amazed and almost terrified that they kept questioning and demanding one of another, saying, What is this? What new (fresh) teaching! With authority He gives orders even to the **unclean spirits** and they obey Him!”

- Evil spirits.

Revelation 16:13 “13 And I saw three **loathsome spirits** like frogs, [leaping] from the mouth of the dragon and from the mouth of the beast and from the mouth of the false prophet. [Exod. 8:3; 1 Kings 22:21-23.]”

Note, the terms “demons” and “evil spirits” are used interchangeably, as well as the terms “evil spirits” and “unclean spirits”.

2. **By nature demons are morally unclean and perverse.** They laugh and mock holiness (Matthew 10:1; Mark 1: 27; Luke 4: 36).

Mark 3:11 “11 And the **spirits, the unclean ones**, as often as they might see Him, fell down before Him and kept screaming out, You are the Son of God!”

Acts 8:7 “7 For **foul spirits** came out of many who were possessed by them, screaming and shouting with a loud voice, and many who were suffering from palsy or were crippled were restored to health.”

3. **Demons have a personality.**

They are lively, intelligent beings, not merely vague powers that influence people. Their personalities are totally corrupt and carry the image of satan and fulfill his evil goals. They want to destroy the Godly image of man that has been created in the Image of God. They crave to live in human bodies through which they can express their evil characters more fully.



In having a personality, demons have:

- A **WILL** – demons are able to make decisions and choices.

*Matthew 12:34, 44 “34 You offspring of vipers! How can you speak good things when you are evil (wicked)? For out of the fullness (the overflow, the superabundance) of the heart the mouth speaks. 44 Then it says, **I will go back to my house from which I came out. And when it arrives, it finds the place unoccupied, swept, put in order, and decorated.**”*

- **KNOWLEDGE** – the demons knew the identify of Y’shua [Jesus].

*Mark 1:23-24 “23 Just at that time there was in their synagogue a man [who was in the power] of an unclean spirit; and now [immediately] he raised a deep and terrible cry from the depths of his throat, saying, 24 What have You to do with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have You come to destroy us? **I know who You are—the Holy One of God!**”*

The example of the seven sons of Sceva – a Jewish Chief Priest.

*Acts 19:15 “15 But [one] evil spirit retorted, **Jesus I know**, and Paul I know about, but who are you?”*

- Demons have **EMOTIONS**.

*James 2:19 “19 You believe that God is one; you do well. So do the demons believe and **shudder** [in terror and horror such as make a man’s hair stand on end and contract the surface of his skin]!”*

- Demons can **SPEAK**.

*Mark 3:11-12 “11 And the spirits, the unclean ones, as often as they might see Him, fell down before Him and **kept screaming** out, You are the Son of God! 12 And He charged them strictly and severely under penalty again and again that they should not make Him known.”*

- Demons have a **SELF-CONSCIOUSNESS**.

We see in the verse below that the demon knew his name and function.

*Mark 5:7-9 “7 And crying out with a loud voice, he said, What have You to do with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? [What is there in common between us?] I solemnly implore you by God, do not begin to torment me! 8 For Jesus was commanding, Come out of the man, you unclean spirit! 9 And He asked him, **What is your name? He replied, My name is Legion, for we are many.**”*

We need to recognize that demons also work in areas of religion, this is called the “teachings of demons”. Through these teachings, demons work to accomplish discord, confusion, and strife in the Body of Messiah.

4. Further, **we need to understand how demons work** – what their activities are.

Demons will:

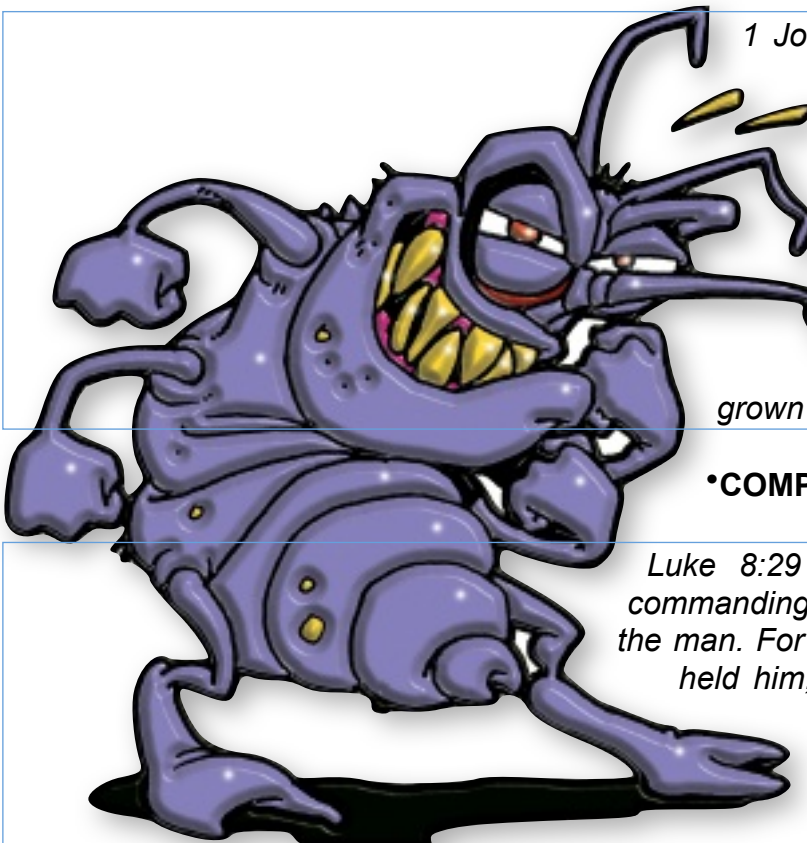
- **SEDUCE** – they make evil attractive. For instance, today smoking and drinking alcohol is “cool”.
- **DECEIVE** – an example of this is religious spirits which keep us in deception. Sadly, these are very much at home and in the Body.

1 Timothy 4:1 “**BUT THE [Holy] Spirit distinctly and expressly declares that in latter times some will turn away from the faith, giving attention to deluding and seducing spirits and doctrines that demons teach,**”

- **ENSLAVE.**

Romans 8:15 “15 For [the Spirit which] you have now received [is] **not a spirit of slavery to put you once more in bondage to fear**, but you have received the Spirit of adoption [the Spirit producing sonship] in [the bliss of] which we cry, Abba (Father)! Father!”

- **TORTURE** – demons will never allow peace. They are always causing instigation and strife.



1 John 4:18 “18 There is no fear in love [dread does not exist], but full-grown (complete, perfect) love turns fear out of doors and expels every trace of terror! **For fear brings with it the thought of punishment,** and [so] he who is afraid has not reached the full maturity of love [is not yet grown into love’s complete perfection].”

• **COMPEL and FORCE.**

Luke 8:29 “29 For Jesus was already commanding the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For many times it had **snatched** and held him; he was **kept under guard and bound with chains and fetters**, but he would break the bonds and be driven by the demon into the wilderness (desert).”

- Demons **POLLUTE** that which is pure, holy, and innocent.

Summary:

Demons fulfill the goal of satan to corrupt and enslave the whole human race. They are satan's "little workers".

- They fight peace in every aspect.
- They cause confusion, strife and destroy harmony.
- They take away all peace and rationality.
- Destroy communication with other people.
- Cause general restlessness.
- Work to cause rebellion against God in order to destroy.

Although the kingdom of darkness – including demons – are powerful and certainly influential in our lives ... we must NOT be afraid. When we have the correct understanding of just what demons are, we understand that they are not spooky, scary, or terrifying. The best illustration of how to "relate" to demons is to liken them to germs.

Are you afraid of germs? If someone says, "You're hands are dirty, you have germs on them" ... would you freak out?

NO. Why?

You understand that germs are a part of the world we live in – that all you need to do is wash your hands. You understand that when you protect yourself from germs – or when you deal with germs correctly, like washing your hands – germs are no big issue. Our view of demons should be the same. If demons are operating in your life – just wash your hands. And because they are a part of this world, through this course you will learn how to protect yourself and your family from attack. No big deal ... God provided us with the ultimate "Cure-All" through Y'shua [Jesus] and His Blood.



HALLELUJAH!

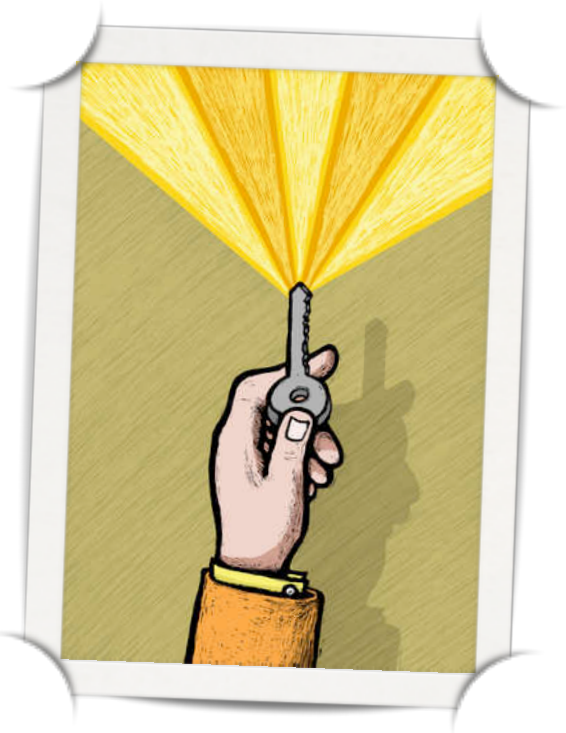
Part 3: Keys of the Kingdom

Keys of the Kingdom ..

We must realize that not only does SIN give legal ground to the kingdom of darkness, but it blocks the POWER of God in our lives.

There are two points of view regarding the enemy:

1. Everything gets blamed on the devil – every sneeze, cough, itch, and so forth. This person doesn't want to take personal responsibility for their life choices or heritage. Since Adam, we have all learnt to shift blame. This person fears the enemy – in essence, this person believes the enemy is really powerful [almost like the example of the Israelites standing against Goliath and the Philistines, until David showed up, the enemy was “stronger”]. The result is, that the person remains in bondage and passivity, never reaching God's Fullness for him.
2. The other view is that the enemy has no power or influence in our lives. This person lives a life of no victory. All that happens to him must somehow be God's “Plan”. This person has eternal life ... but not the ABUNDANT life we are promised in the Book of John. The result again is that the person remains bound and passive against the enemy.



John 10:10 “10 The thief comes only in order to steal and kill and destroy. **I came that they may have and enjoy life, and have it in abundance (to the full, till it overflows).**”

Many of us are frustrated, weary, and feel like we are constantly losing the battles ... we wonder why? The following are some general points in answer to why as children of God lose the battles ...

- No knowledge concerning the enemy.

Hosea 4:6 “6 **My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge;** because you [the priestly nation] have rejected knowledge, I will also reject you that you shall be no priest to Me; seeing you have forgotten the law of your God, I will also forget your children.”

- Does not know the enemy's strategies.
- Does not know he is in a war.
- Remember, YOU determine if you're going to win or lose – the ball is in your court!

How does the enemy wage war?

- Individually – the enemy steals the Word (Seed) from your heart and keeps you too busy for time with God. The enemy knows your weaknesses, for example, depression, sexual, anger, and so forth.
- Physical life – the enemy brings diseases, poverty, tragedies, accidents, and so forth.
- Family life – the enemy causes separation and distrust, and brings attacks on the children through abortion, through demonic toys and then fear plays a big role, through child abuse – sexual, emotional, physical.
- Society – the enemy brings strife and discord.
- Preacher and congregation – the enemy keeps the preacher so busy he cannot hear from God.

Four attitudes I can maintain:			
Offensive.	Defensive.	Surrender to the enemy.	Run away!
			

Remember ... satan is not yet bound finally as the Word promises us – he is very much alive and well planning a New World Order¹¹. Yet, we have been provided the very best of weapons for this warfare ... let's learn what they are and how to USE them.

¹¹ For more additional study, see the following websites: <http://futurequake.com/>; <http://vftb.net/>; <http://radioliberty.com/>; <http://realityzone.com/>.

Our spiritual weapons.

The spiritual battle is a tangible reality!

After the Israelites moved across the Jordan, they stood before Jericho, which was impenetrable. They were slaves for four hundred years. Their resources and weapons were not adequate to conquer the city, thus the angels of the LORD gave them spiritual weapons. Physically they would never win! Canaan was given to them – homes, gardens, vineyards, and so forth. It was before their eyes – but they had to possess it!

We are confronting an enemy that has established himself for a long time in our lives. The bondages look impenetrable, but we have POWERFUL spiritual weapons. Sickness in the body, marriage problems, rebellion in children, finances – all these are physical realities, they are like the walls of Jericho. We have to use our spiritual weapons!

*Joshua 1:3 “3 Every place upon which the sole of your foot shall tread, **that have I given to you, as I promised Moses.***

*2 Corinthians 10:3 “3 For though we walk (live) in the flesh, we are not carrying on our warfare according to the flesh and **using mere human weapons.**”*

*Matthew 16:19 “19 **I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven;** and whatever you bind (declare to be improper and unlawful) on earth must be what is already bound in heaven; and whatever you loose (declare lawful) on earth must be what is already loosed in heaven.”*

Following Messiah ...

As followers of Messiah Y’shua [Jesus] – disciples who strive to walk in His Footsteps – let’s study how Y’shua [Jesus] reacted to demons.

- ⇒ Y’shua [Jesus] proclaimed the Good News of the Kingdom of God and confronted the kingdom of darkness head on.
- ⇒ Y’shua [Jesus] brought the Kingdom of God. He preached and expelled demons.

*Mark 1:39 “39 [So] He went throughout the whole of Galilee, **preaching in their synagogues and driving out demons.**”*

- He sent out others to do the same.

*Mark 3:14-15 “14 And He appointed twelve to continue to be with Him, and that He might **send them out to preach [as apostles or special messengers]** 15 And to have authority and power to **heal the sick and to drive out demons:**”*

Matthew 10:1, 7-8 “1 AND JESUS summoned to Him His twelve disciples and gave them **power and authority** over unclean spirits, to drive them out, and to **cure all kinds** of disease and **all kinds** of weakness and infirmity. 7 And as you go, **preach**, saying, The Kingdom of Heaven is at hand! 8 **Cure the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, drive out demons.** Freely (without pay) you have received, freely (without charge) give.”



Matthew 16:15-18 “15 He said to them, But who do you [yourselves] say that I am? 16 Simon Peter replied, You are the Christ, the Son of the Living God. 17 Then Jesus answered him, **Blessed** (happy, fortunate, and to be envied) are you, Simon Bar-Jonah. For flesh and blood [men] have not revealed this to you, but My Father Who is in Heaven. 18 And I tell you, you are Peter [Greek, Petros—a large piece of rock], and on this rock [Greek, petra—a huge rock like Gibraltar] I will build My church, **and the gates of Hades (the powers of the infernal region) shall not overpower it [or be strong to its detriment or hold out against it].**”

Luke 10: 9, 17-21 “9 And **heal the sick** in it and say to them, The Kingdom of God has come close to you. 17 The seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the demons are subject to us in Your Name! 18 And He said to them, I saw Satan falling like a lightning [flash] from heaven. 19 **Behold! I have given you authority and power to trample upon serpents and scorpions, and [physical and mental strength and ability] over all the power that the enemy [possesses]; and nothing shall in any way harm you.** 20 Nevertheless, do not rejoice at this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rejoice that your names are enrolled in heaven. [Exod. 32:32; Ps. 69:28; Dan. 12:1.] 21 In that same hour He rejoiced and gloried in the Holy Spirit and said, I thank You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have concealed these things [relating to salvation] from the wise and understanding and learned, and revealed them to babes (the childish, unskilled, and untaught). Yes, Father, for such was Your gracious will and choice and good pleasure.”

NOTE! Driving out of demons was part of the Kingdom brought to mankind – we must remember Y’shua [Jesus] ministered to the Jews [the redeemed people], not to heathens. Our main aim is to bring liberty to people. The work of the Body is the same as that of Y’shua [Jesus].

The work of Y'shua [Jesus] was two-fold:

- Forgiveness of sin.

*Acts 5:31 "31 God exalted Him to His Right Hand to be Prince and Leader and **Savior** and **Deliverer** and **Preserver**, in order to grant **repentance** to Israel and to bestow **forgiveness and release from sins**."*

*Acts 10:43 "43 To Him all the prophets testify (bear witness) that everyone who believes in Him [who adheres to, trusts in, and relies on Him, giving himself up to Him] **receives forgiveness of sins through His Name**."*

- Setting the captive free – to destroy the works of the devil.

*Luke 4:18-21 "18 The Spirit of the Lord [is] upon Me, because He has **anointed Me** [the Anointed One, the Messiah] to preach the **good news** (the Gospel) to the poor; He has sent Me to **announce release** to the captives and recovery of sight to the blind, to send forth as delivered those who are oppressed [who are downtrodden, bruised, crushed, and broken down by calamity], 19 **To proclaim the accepted and acceptable year of the Lord** [the day when salvation and the free favors of God profusely abound.] 20 Then He rolled up the book and gave it back to the attendant and sat down; and the eyes of all in the synagogue were gazing [attentively] at Him. 21 And He began to speak to them: Today this Scripture has been fulfilled while you are present and hearing."*



*1 John 3:8 "8 [But] he who commits sin [who practices evil] is of the devil [takes his character from the evil one], for the devil has sinned (violated the divine law) from the beginning. **The reason the Son of God was made manifest (visible) was to undo (destroy, loosen, and dissolve) the works the devil [has done]**."*

Reaction – there was an immediate reaction from the demons in the Presence of Y’shua [Jesus]. The demons could not remain quiet – they had to call out. The anointing forces demons to manifest [Mark 5:6-13].

*Mark 1:23-25 “23 Just at that time there was in their synagogue a man [who was in the power] of an unclean spirit; and now [immediately] he raised a **deep and terrible cry from the depths of his throat**, saying, 24 What have You to do with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have You come to destroy us? I know who You are—the Holy One of God! 25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hush up (be muzzled, gagged), and come out of him!”*

*Mark 3:11 “11 And the spirits, the unclean ones, as often as they might see Him, fell down before Him and **kept screaming out**, You are the Son of God!”*

THE POSITION OF THE BODY OF MESSIAH:

Psalms 110:1-3	Position of rulership.
Ephesians 1:20-22	The position of the Body.
Colossians 2:15	He stripped the power of the enemy.
Colossians 2:19	Fullness of God in bodily form.
Colossians 2:10	We are complete in Him.
1 Peter 3:22	Position of Messiah Y’shua [Jesus].
Ephesians 2:6	Sit in heavenly places.

Who has ALL authority and rulership?

*Psalms 110:1-3 “**THE LORD (God)** says to my Lord (the Messiah), Sit at My right hand, until **I make Your adversaries Your footstool**. [Matt. 26:64; Acts 2:34; 1 Cor. 15:25; Col. 3:1; Heb. 12:2.] 2 The Lord will send forth from Zion the scepter of Your strength; rule, then, in the midst of Your foes. [Rom. 11:26, 27.] 3 Your people will offer themselves willingly in the day of Your power, in the beauty of holiness and in holy array out of the womb of the morning; to You [will spring forth] Your young men, who are as the dew.”*

The purpose of the Body of Messiah:

*Ephesians 3:10 “10 [The purpose is] that through the Church the complicated, many-sided wisdom of God in all its infinite variety and innumerable aspects **might now be made known to the angelic rulers and authorities** (principalities and powers) in the heavenly sphere.”*

 We are complete in Him!

*Colossians 2:10 “10 And you are in Him, made full and having come to fullness of life [in Christ you too are filled with the Godhead—Father, Son and Holy Spirit—and reach full spiritual stature]. **And He is the Head of all rule and authority [of every angelic principality and power].**”*

☪ We are seated in Heavenly Places!

*Ephesians 2:6 “6 And He raised us up together with Him and **made us sit down together [giving us joint seating with Him] in the heavenly sphere [by virtue of our being] in Christ Jesus (the Messiah, the Anointed One).**”*

*Psalm 44:5 “5 Through You shall we push down our enemies; **through Your name shall we tread them under who rise up against us.**”*

*Psalm 45:6 “6 Your throne, O God, is forever and ever; **the scepter of righteousness is the scepter of Your kingdom.**”*

We are God's ambassadors here on earth. In spite of all the laws of the land, we carry within us God's Torah [Instructions] – the Higher Authority – the Law of Love.

We must do what Y'shua [Jesus] did. Wherever you go, the Kingdom goes. The ambassador is empowered with all authority on behalf of the country he represents.

*Matthew 18:18 “18 Truly I tell you, **whatever you forbid and declare to be improper and unlawful on earth must be what is already forbidden in heaven, and whatever you permit and declare proper and lawful on earth must be what is already permitted in heaven.**”*

We establish the Kingdom of God in the world:



As AMBASSADORS of the Kingdom of God, we represent our King and His Rule on earth.

As such, although we are IN the world, we operate on a Higher Law - the Law of LOVE.

*1 Corinthians 4:20 “20 For the kingdom of God consists of and is based on not talk **but power (moral power and excellence of soul).**”*

The position of the Head of the Kingdom is in Heaven:

*Matthew 16:16-19 “16 Simon Peter replied, You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. 17 Then Jesus answered him, Blessed (happy, fortunate, and to be envied) are you, Simon Bar-Jonah. **For flesh and blood [men] have not revealed this to you, but My Father Who is in heaven.** 18 And I tell you, you are Peter [Greek, Petros—a large piece of rock], and on this rock [Greek, petra—a huge rock like Gibraltar] I will build My church, and the gates of Hades (the powers of the infernal region) shall not overpower it [or be strong to its detriment or hold out against it]. 19 I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatever you bind (declare to be improper and unlawful) on earth must be what is already bound in heaven; and whatever you loose (declare lawful) on earth must be what is already loosed in heaven.”*

To take God's Will and establish it in the earth, to bind what is not God's Will and loose that which is. We know how God wants His Kingdom ruled so that is why we can lay our hands on the sick, take authority over the demons, and so forth.

The POWERFUL Name of Y'shua [Jesus].

- The Name of Y'shua [Jesus] – our Authority.



Ancient Hebrew writing of “Y'shua”

*Ephesians 1:21 “21 **Far above all rule and authority and power and dominion and every name that is named** [above every title that can be conferred], not only in this age and in this world, but also in the age and the world which are to come.”*

*Philippians 2:9-10 “9 Therefore [because He stooped so low] God has highly exalted Him and has freely bestowed on **Him the name that is above every name**, 10 That in (at) the name of Jesus every knee should (must) bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth,*

*Matthew 28:18 “18 Jesus approached and, breaking the silence, said to them, **All authority (all power of rule) in heaven and on earth has been given to Me.**”*

- The NAME is as a scepter in the hands of a king.

*Psalm 110:1-2 “1 **THE LORD** (God) says to my Lord (the Messiah), Sit at My right hand, until I make Your adversaries Your footstool. 2 **The Lord will send forth from Zion the scepter of Your strength; rule, then, in the midst of Your foes.**”*

*Psalm 45:6 “6 Your throne, O God, is forever and ever; **the scepter of righteousness is the scepter of Your kingdom.**”*

- We stand in the place of Y’shua [Jesus] and use the Name of Jesus as if He Himself is here.

*Matthew 10:1 “1 **AND JESUS** summoned to Him His twelve disciples and gave them **power and authority** over unclean spirits, to drive them out, and to **cure all kinds of disease** and all kinds of weakness and infirmity.”*

*John 14:12-14 “12 I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, if anyone **steadfastly believes in Me**, he will himself be able to do the things that I do; and he will do even **greater things** than these, because I go to the Father. 13 And I will do [I Myself will grant] whatever you ask in **My Name** [as presenting all that I AM], so that the Father may be glorified and extolled in (through) the Son. 14 [Yes] I will grant [I Myself will do for you] whatever you shall ask in **My Name** [as presenting all that I AM].”*

- God delegated this authority to us.

*Mark 16:17 “17 And these attesting signs will accompany those who believe: **in My name** they will drive out demons; they will speak in new languages;”*

*Luke 9:1 “1 **THEN JESUS** called together the Twelve [apostles] and **gave them power and authority over all demons**, and to cure diseases,”*

*Luke 10:19 “19 Behold! I have given you **authority and power** to trample upon serpents and scorpions, and [physical and mental strength and ability] over all the **power** that the enemy [possesses]; and nothing shall in any way harm you.”*

- Protection – OFFENSIVE.

*John 17:11 “11 And [now] I am no more in the world, but these are [still] in the world, and I am coming to You. **Holy Father, keep in Your Name** [in the knowledge of Yourself] those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as We [are One].”*

- Protection – DEFENSIVE.

*Proverbs 18:10 “10 **The Name of the Lord is a strong tower**; the [consistently] righteous man [upright and in right standing with God] runs into it and is safe, high [above evil] and strong.”*

1 Samuel 17:45 “45 Then said David to the Philistine, You come to me with a sword, a spear, and a javelin, but **I come to you in the Name of the Lord of hosts, the God of the ranks of Israel, Whom you have defied.**”

- Measures (Ranking) of Authority is determined by obedience.
 - Must have victory in your personal life
 - Authority is not automatic, but must be taken in faith by the Christian, and in the Power of the Holy Spirit.
 - Must have knowledge and discernment of the Will of God in every situation.

We learn a very important lesson in Judges 14 to 16. It is the story of Samson and how he grew in ranking as he faced different enemies.

Judges 14:6 “6 And the **Spirit of the Lord came mightily upon him**, and he tore the lion as he would have torn a kid, and he had nothing in his hand; but he did not tell his father or mother what he had done.”

Judges 15:8 “8 And he smote them hip and thigh [unsparingly], a great slaughter; and he went down and dwelt in the cleft of the rock of Etam.”



We read Samson kills a lion. In Judges 14:19, we see Samson kills thirty men. In Judges 15:8, he kills a great number of men and again later in verse 15, he kills a thousand men. In Judges 16, Samson possesses the gates of the city and finally kills all the lords and princes of the Philistines.

We see the same principle in the story of David and how he grew in ranking. He first faced the lion, then the bear ... and then only Goliath.

It is important to **understand the difference between Authority and Power**. If we take the example of a traffic cop – his BADGE shows his AUTHORITY. His WEAPON shows his POWER. A huge truck is speeding towards him ... What is he going to do?

When we use the Name of Y'shua [Jesus] – this is our AUTHORITY¹². The POWER of the Holy Spirit is our “weapon”.

The Holy Spirit – our Power!

The Holy Spirit enforces the words of our MOUTH.

*Ephesians 1:19 “19 And [so that you can know and understand] what is the immeasurable and unlimited and **surpassing greatness of His power** in and for us who believe, as demonstrated in the **working of His mighty strength**,”*

- The Holy Spirit is our DUNAMIS [root word for dynamite] Power and Authority.

*Acts 1:8 “8 But you shall receive **power** (ability, efficiency, and might) when the Holy Spirit has come upon you, and you shall be My witnesses in Jerusalem and all Judea and Samaria and to the ends (the very bounds) of the earth.”*

*Ephesians 3:16 “16 May He grant you out of the **rich treasury** of His glory to be **strengthened** and **reinforced** with **mighty power** in the inner man by the [Holy] Spirit [Himself indwelling your innermost being and personality].”*

- We are strengthened by the Power of the Holy Spirit. The POWER of the Holy Spirit enables [empowers] us to move in His Power, Authority, and Strength.



*Zechariah 4:6 “6 Then he said to me, This [addition of the bowl to the candlestick, causing it to yield a ceaseless supply of oil from the olive trees] is the word of the Lord to Zerubbabel, saying, **Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit** [of Whom the oil is a symbol], says the Lord of hosts.”*

¹² For additional study, please see our book “*Authority And Ranking*”, available from the website or for order from the office.

- The Holy Spirit is ACTIVE in deliverance, by revealing demonic strongholds.

*Matthew 12:28-29 “28 But if it is by the **Spirit of God that I drive out the demons**, then the kingdom of God has come upon you [before you expected it]. 29 Or how can a person go into a strong man’s house and carry off his goods (the entire equipment of his house) without first binding the strong man? Then indeed he may plunder his house.”*

*Luke 11:20-22 “20 But if I drive out the **demons by the finger of God**, then the kingdom of God has [already] come upon you. 21 When the strong man, fully armed, [from his courtyard] guards his own dwelling, his belongings are undisturbed [his property is at peace and is secure]. 22 But when one stronger than he attacks him and conquers him, he robs him of his whole armor on which he had relied and divides up and distributes all his goods as plunder (spoil).”*

Faith.

We must take hold of the Kingdom with POWER and AUTHORITY. Faith is used as the “grip” to take hold of this power and authority.

Faith is based on the Revelation of God. The Word of God maintains this faith. We resist by speaking the Word.

*James 4:7 “7 So be subject to God. **Resist the devil** [stand firm against him], and he will flee from you.”*

*1 Peter 5:9 “9 Withstand him; be firm in **faith** [against his onset—rooted, established, strong, immovable, and determined], knowing that the same (identical) sufferings are appointed to your brotherhood (the whole body of Christians) throughout the world.”*

Faith is confirmed by the Blood Covenant [Jeremiah 31]. The Blood Covenant challenges satan and his works.

*Colossians 1:13 “13 [The Father] has delivered and drawn us to Himself out of the control and the dominion of darkness and has **transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of His love**,”*

Faith is released during prayer. You must open your mouth and release your faith – it penetrates satan’s territory.

*Hebrews 11:16 “16 But the truth is that they were **yearning** for and aspiring to a better and more desirable country, that is, a heavenly [one]. For that reason God is not ashamed to be called their God [even to be surnamed their God—the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob], for He has prepared a city for them.”*

*1 John 5:4 “4 For whatever is born of **God is victorious over the world**; and this is the victory that conquers the world, **even our faith**.”*

We must pray in **FAITH**.

James 1:6 “6 Only it must be in **faith** that he asks with no wavering (no hesitating, no doubting). For the one who wavers (hesitates, doubts) is like the billowing surge out at sea that is blown hither and thither and tossed by the wind.”



By **FAITH** we are justified and have PEACE with God.

Romans 5:1 “1 **THEREFORE**, SINCE we are justified (acquitted, declared righteous, and given a right standing with God) through faith, let us [grasp the fact that we] have [the peace of reconciliation to hold and to enjoy] peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).”

We now live by **FAITH**.

Galatians 2:20 “20 I have been crucified with Christ [in Him I have shared His crucifixion]; it is no longer I who live, but Christ (the Messiah) lives in me; and the life I now live in the body **I live by faith** in (by adherence to and reliance on and complete trust in) the Son of God, Who loved me and gave Himself up for me.”

Galatians 3:2 “2 Let me ask you this one question: Did you receive the [Holy] Spirit as the result of obeying the Law and doing its works, or was it by hearing [the message of the Gospel] and **believing** [it]? [Was it from observing a law of rituals or from a message of faith?]”

Y’shua [Jesus] as our *Kohen Ha’Gadol* [High Priest] intercedes that our faith does not fail.

Luke 22:31-32 “31 Simon, Simon (Peter), listen! Satan has asked excessively that [all of] you be given up to him [out of the power and keeping of God], that he might sift [all of] you like grain, 32 But I have prayed especially for you [Peter], **that your [own] faith may not fail; and when you yourself have turned again, strengthen and establish your brethren.**”

NOTHING BUT THE BLOOD ...

*Revelation 12:11 “11 And they have **overcome (conquered) him by means of the blood of the Lamb and by the utterance of their testimony**, for they did not love and cling to life even when faced with death [holding their lives cheap till they had to die for their witnessing].”*

- Blood speaks of a New Covenant that breaks the power of sin.
- It is a perfect covering against the accuser.
- It gives us a perfect right of existence before God.
- It gives us the only right to come before the Father.
- It cleanses our conscience – an uneasy conscience drains faith.

*Hebrews 10:22 “22 Let us all come forward and draw near with true (honest and sincere) hearts in unqualified assurance and **absolute conviction engendered by faith** (by that leaning of the entire human personality on God in **absolute trust and confidence** in His power, wisdom, and goodness), having our hearts **sprinkled and purified** from a guilty (evil) conscience and our bodies cleansed with pure water.”*

- The Blood cleanses us of all sin.

*1 Peter 1:18-19 “18 You must know (recognize) that you were **redeemed** (ransomed) from the useless (fruitless) way of living inherited by tradition from [your] forefathers, not with corruptible things [such as] silver and gold, 19 But [you were purchased] with the **precious blood of Christ (the Messiah), like that of a [sacrificial] lamb without blemish or spot.**”*

- Trust the Blood – It destroys the accusations of the enemy.
- “Greatest Disinfectant”.
- The Blood lives!
- Disobedience – consequences resulting in generational curses.

*1 Peter 1:2 “2 Who were chosen and foreknown by God the Father and **consecrated** (sanctified, made holy) by the Spirit to be obedient to Jesus Christ (the Messiah) and to be **sprinkled with [His] blood**: May grace (spiritual blessing) and **peace** be given you in **increasing abundance** [that spiritual peace to be realized in and through Christ, freedom from fears, agitating passions, and moral conflicts].”*

*Leviticus 8:24 “24 And he brought Aaron’s sons and Moses put some of the **blood** on the tips of their right **ears**, and the thumbs of their right **hands**, and the great **toes** of their right feet; and Moses dashed the blood upon the altar round about.”*

- Make it your own – apply the Blood over your houses, finances, children, marriage, and so forth. The Blood Covenant includes all my possessions too!

*1 Kings 8:5 "5 King Solomon and all the congregation of Israel who had assembled before him were with him before the ark, **sacrificing sheep and oxen, so many that they could not be reported or counted.**"*

*2 Chronicles 5:6 "6 Also King Solomon and all the assembly of Israel who were gathered to him before the ark **sacrificed sheep and oxen so numerous that they could not be counted or reported.**"*

- The Blood of Y'shua [Jesus] is our Perfect Atonement!

We read in 1 Kings 8:5 and 2 Chronicles 5:6 that 22, 000 cattle and 120, 000 sheep could only cover sin in the Old Testament! Praise God for His Word in Zechariah 13:1 – it speaks of the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus] that will be a Fountain that will never run dry!

*Zechariah 13:1 "1 IN THAT day there shall be a fountain opened for the house of David and for the inhabitants of Jerusalem **[to cleanse them from] sin and uncleanness.**"*

The Precious Blood of Y'shua ...

The following are the various places where Y'shua [Jesus] shed His Blood and what He Redeemed for us:



1. In the Garden of Gethsemane, He won back our **WILL POWER**.

*Matthew 26:39 “39 And going a little farther, He threw Himself upon the ground on His face and prayed saying, My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from Me; nevertheless, **not what I will [not what I desire], but as You will and desire.**”*

*Luke 22:44 “44 And being in an agony [of mind], He prayed [all the] more earnestly and intently, and His sweat became like great **clots of blood dropping down upon the ground.**”*

2. At the whipping post He received thirty-nine lashes and won back our **HEALING**.

*Isaiah 53:5 “5 But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our guilt and iniquities; the chastisement [needful to obtain] peace and well-being for us was upon Him, and **with the stripes [that wounded] Him we are healed and made whole.**”*

3. Wearing the crown of thorns – He won back our **PROSPERITY**.

*Genesis 3:17-18 “17 And to Adam He said, Because you have listened and given heed to the voice of your wife and have eaten of the tree of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it, the ground is under a curse because of you; in sorrow and toil shall you eat [of the fruits] of it all the days of your life. 18 **Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth for you, and you shall eat the plants of the field.**”*

The price was paid for the curse!

*Matthew 27:29 “29 And, weaving a **crown of thorns**, they put it on His head and put a reed (staff) in His right hand. And kneeling before Him, they made sport of Him, saying, Hail (greetings, good health to You, long life to You), King of the Jews!”*



*2 Corinthians 8:9 “9 Only be careful that this **power of choice** (this permission and liberty to do as you please) which is yours, does not [somehow] become a hindrance (cause of stumbling) to the weak or overscrupulous [giving them an impulse to sin].”*

4. His nail pierced Hands – won back our **DOMINION** of where we **WORK**.
5. His pierced Feet won back our dominion of where we **WALK**. Take back what the enemy has stolen from you!

Deuteronomy 11:24 “24 **Every place upon which the sole of your foot shall tread shall be yours:** from the wilderness to Lebanon, and from the River, the river Euphrates, to the western sea [the Mediterranean] your territory shall be.”

6. His Heart was pierced and won back our **JOY!** The weight of our sins broke His Heart! Joy is to be the **CENTER** piece of our **WALK** of **FAITH!**

Nehemiah 8:10 “10 Then [Ezra] told them, Go your way, eat the fat, drink the sweet drink, and send portions to him for whom nothing is prepared; for this day is holy to our Lord. And be not grieved and depressed, **for the joy of the Lord is your strength and stronghold.**”

Psalms 147:3 “3 He **heals the brokenhearted and binds up their wounds** [curing their pains and their sorrows]. [Ps. 34:18; Isa. 57:15; 61:1; Luke 4:18.]”

Revelation 21:4 “4 God will **wipe away every tear from their eyes;** and death shall be no more, neither shall there be anguish (sorrow and mourning) nor grief nor pain any more, for the old conditions and **the former order of things have passed away.** [Isa. 25:8; 35:10.]”

Our Absolute Foundation ... The Word of God.



Jeremiah 1:12 “12 Then said the Lord to me, You have seen well, for I am alert and active, **watching over My word to perform it.**”

Isaiah 55:11 “11 So shall My word be that goes forth out of My mouth: it shall not return to Me void [without producing any effect, useless], **but it shall accomplish that which I please and purpose, and it shall prosper in the thing for which I sent it.**”

Isaiah 40:8 “8 The grass withers, the flower fades, **but the word of our God will stand forever.**”

2 Thessalonians 2:13 “13 But we, brethren beloved by the Lord, ought and are obligated [as those who are in debt] to give thanks always to God for you, because God chose you from the beginning as His firstfruits (first converts) for salvation **through the sanctifying work of the [Holy] Spirit and [your] belief in (adherence to, trust in, and reliance on) the Truth.**”

REMEMBER ... what you put in will determine what you get out! The devil cannot stand truth and as long as you stand on the Word of Truth, you will not be moved.

- Our authority over satan is from the Word of God¹³.

*Matthew 18:18 “18 Truly I tell you, **whatever you forbid and declare** to be improper and unlawful on earth must be what is already forbidden in heaven, and whatever you permit and declare proper and lawful on earth must be what is already permitted in heaven.”*

*Luke 10:19 “19 Behold! I have given you **authority and power** to trample upon serpents and scorpions, and [physical and mental strength and ability] **over all the power that the enemy [possesses]; and nothing shall in any way harm you.**”*

*Colossians 2:15 “15 [God] **disarmed the principalities and powers** that were ranged against us and made a bold display and public example of them, **in triumphing** over them in Him and in it [the cross].”*

“There is no more powerful composition than that of the Holy Spirit and the Word of God. When combined in the right proportion, the enemy will most certainly be exposed and defeated.” – Michael Harper

Praise and worship!

- Praise is a powerful weapon that causes confusion in the camp of the enemy.

*2 Chronicles 20:22 “22 And when they **began to sing and to praise**, the Lord set ambushments against the men of Ammon, Moab, and Mount Seir who had come against Judah, and they were [self-] slaughtered;”*

*Psalms 149:6-9 “6 Let the **high praises of God be in their throats and a two-edged sword in their hands**, 7 To wreak vengeance upon the nations and chastisement upon the peoples, 8 To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron, 9 To execute upon them the judgment written. He [the Lord] is the honor of all His saints. Praise the Lord! (Hallelujah!)”*

- Praise elevates the Lord and strengthens us spiritually – it also builds up the believer.

UNITY.

Unity within families, communities, and the Body – and in PRAYER – is a powerful “wall of protection” and weapon against the enemy.

*John 17:21 “21 That they **all may be one**, [just] as You, Father, are in Me and I in You, that they also **may be one in Us**, so that the world may believe and be convinced that You have sent Me.”*

¹³ Additional Scriptures: James 4:7, 1 Peter 8:8-9, 1 John 3:8, 1 John 4:4, Revelation 12:11.

1 Corinthians 3:14 “14 If the work which any person has built **on this Foundation** [any product of his efforts whatever] survives [this test], he will get his reward.”

Judges 7:7 “7 And the Lord said to Gideon, **With the 300 men who lapped I will deliver you, and give the Midianites into your hand.** Let all the others return every man to his home.”

Matthew 18:19 “19 Again I tell you, **if two of you on earth agree** (harmonize together, make a symphony together) about whatever [anything and everything] they may ask, it will come to pass and be done for them by My Father in heaven.”

Acts 4:24 “24 And when they heard it, lifted their voices together **with one united mind** to God and said, O Sovereign Lord, You are He Who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and everything that is in them,”

Fasting.

Fasting has become a “common” word in the Body of Messiah in the world today. Whilst this is clearly a significant part of the amour of a believer, we find that very little is really said about this principle.

The first obvious “contradiction” about fasting is the fact that it is directly **in opposition** to God’s Character. After all:

- God creates life.
- God makes plants and animals so that man can survive.
- God’s Principle of the Seed¹⁴ is a foundation stone to much of the Bible.

To fast therefore seems to:

- Disrupt this **cycle** of life (time).
- Put on **hold** the re-creative action that food brings to empower human life.



¹⁴ For additional study, please see our book “AMP Feast of Sukkot – And God Called”, available from the website or for order from the office.

Fasting becomes a boundary of the Covenant . . .

The Book of Genesis describes the earliest Covenantal relationship between God and man. The word “fast” is not mentioned, however if we look closely we see the underlying principle.

God **defines** the Covenant terms:

- You can eat anything but you must **fast** (not eat) of the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil (Genesis 2:17).
- You must eat of the herbs¹⁵ of the field but **not** of the animals, birds, and fish (Genesis 1:29-30).

So somehow what we **eat or don't eat** defines whether we are living inside of the Covenantal boundary or not.

The consequence of this principle becomes “real” the moment that Adam and Eve “eat” of the Tree. We see that they **expelled** from the Garden of Eden and live outside of the **absolute intimacy** of God.

However, God's Redemptive Plan is revealed immediately:

- Man needs to be obedient to Gods Commandments at all times in order that we remain in harmony with Him (this includes living a disciplined life to eat only that which God has decreed as clean and food).
- Man's redemption will come through a Messiah “born of a woman”, an act which:
 - Will **reverse** the curse,
 - And will remove the guarding angel with the flaming sword from the entrance of the Garden of Eden (New Jerusalem).

We therefore learn three important points here:

1. Satan questions our willingness to be obedient to God's Commandments and does so by:
 - a. Adding to and/or subtracting from God's Word – challenging our knowledge of God's Word and our willingness to listen to the Holy Spirit.
 - b. Challenging man's ability to control the physical man – will we focus on God's Plans or on our own fleshly desires.
2. Man's willingness to obey God in the physical domain (fasting), by **abstaining** from the:
 - a. Physical food which God has identified as unclean,
 - b. And from unclean spiritual food (pagan teaching) which get offered to us,

¹⁵ Note, the herbs and fruit would be as “meat” (Strong's Hebrew 402).

Will determine our likelihood of living and staying in the land of Covenantal Blessing.

3. If we chose to reject this commandment of God then we need to understand that there are consequences.

These “consequences” have been pronounced over man since the fall of Adam and Eve:

- Woman will have pain in childbirth.
- Man would have to toil hard in order to produce the food that he will eat.

In direct relationship to the degree that we observe and are obedient to God’s Commandments, we will find that this burden will **be lighter or heavier** in our lives.

Food – and particularly bread – is a symbol of the hope of our deliverance ...



Fasting – that function when we disrupt the normal path of life, where we eat in order to sustain life – has the function of giving us **hope**.

Our example is that of Y’shua [Jesus], Who **fasted** before He went into the wilderness.

*Matthew 4:4 “2 And He went **without food** for forty days and forty nights, and later He was hungry.”*

We know that Y’shua’s [Jesus’] purpose was to bring restoration to **all things**. This means that each and every act had a divine purpose to **change** these things that had been taken off course, back into alignment with their Godly Purpose.

Let’s see the “restoration” that is set in motion by Y’shua’s [Jesus’] stay in the wilderness. Firstly we need to ask ourselves, what action by mankind is being reversed?

None other than the action where Adam and Eve ate of the Tree of Knowledge between Good and Evil!

What were the results of Y'shua's [Jesus'] forty-day fast?

- Restoration of the Sin of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.

In Genesis we read the following story of man's initial sin ...

*Genesis 3:4-6 "4 But the serpent said to the woman, **[A] You shall not surely die**, 5 For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing the difference between good and evil and blessing and calamity. 6 And when the woman **[B] saw that the tree was good** (suitable, pleasant) for food and that it was delightful to look at, and a tree to be **[C] desired in order to make one wise**, she took of its fruit and ate; and she gave some also to her husband, and he ate."*

Lets break this up into three components:

- A. Satan says: "If you eat of this fruit **you will not die**" (Genesis 3:4).
 - a. Man says: "I can look after myself".
 - b. Note the corresponding attack and the response of Y'shua [Jesus].

*Matthew 4:3-4 "3 And the tempter came and said to Him, **If You are God's Son, command these stones to be made [loaves of] bread**. 4 But He replied, **It has been written**, Man shall not live and be upheld and sustained by bread alone, but by every word that comes forth from the mouth of God."*

- B. Man looks on the fruit and **is tempted** to disobey God because that which man's eye sees, seems to be good (Genesis 3:6b).
 - a. Note the corresponding attack and the response of Y'shua [Jesus] – again we see that the image of man and **man's own achievements seems good**.
 - b. The attribute of position, possessions, and self-achievement become the building block of this thought pattern.

*Matthew 4:5-7 "5 Then the devil took Him into the holy city and placed Him on a turret (pinnacle, gable) of the temple sanctuary. 6 And he said to Him, **If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down; for it is written, He will give His angels charge over you, and they will bear you up on their hands, lest you strike your foot against a stone**. 7 Jesus said to him, **On the other hand, it is written also, You shall not tempt, test thoroughly, or try exceedingly the Lord your God**."*

- C. Man can be equal to God – if we eat of the fruit of wisdom, then we can plot our own path in life (Genesis 3:6b).

- a. Note the corresponding attack and the response of Y'shua [Jesus]. Man is fixated with the thought of power and of being in charge of "kingdoms", as well as the action to dominate fellowman is a fundamental building block of this thought process.

*Matthew 4:8-10 "8 Again, the devil took Him up on a very high mountain and **showed Him all the kingdoms of the world** and the glory (the splendor, magnificence, preeminence, and excellence) of them. 9 And he said to Him, These things, all taken together, I will give You, if You will prostrate Yourself before me and do homage and worship me. 10 Then Jesus said to him, Begone, Satan! For it has been written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him alone shall you serve."*



**“I am my
OWN boss!”**

**“I succeed
by MYSELF!”**

**“I look after
MYSELF!”**

Fasting empowered Y'shua [Jesus] to face these giants and bring the restoration that tells man that the price for the sin of the Garden of Eden has been paid in full!

*Matthew 4:11 "11 Then the **devil departed from Him**, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him."*

➤ *Proof of our deliverance.*

Y'shua [Jesus] tells His disciples that they should "remember" Him by participating in the "eating of the bread and drinking of the cup".

*Matthew 26:26-27 "26 Now as they were eating, **Jesus took bread and, praising God, gave thanks** and asked Him to bless it to their use, and when He had broken it, **He gave it to the disciples and said, Take, eat; this is My body.** 27 And He took a cup, and when He had given thanks, He gave it to them, saying, *Drink of it, all of you;*"*

Mark 14:22-24 “22 And while they were eating, **He took a loaf [of bread], praised God and gave thanks and asked Him to bless it to their use.** [Then] He broke [it] and gave to them and said, Take. Eat. This is My body. 23 He also took a cup [of the juice of grapes], and when He had given thanks, He gave [it] to them, and they all drank of it. 24 And He said to them, This is My blood [which ratifies] the new covenant, [the blood] which is being poured out for (on account of) many.”



1 Corinthians 11:23-26 “23 For I received from the Lord Himself that which I passed on to you [it was given to me personally], that the Lord Jesus on the night when He was treacherously delivered up and while His betrayal **was in progress took bread,** 24 **And when He had given thanks, He broke [it] and said, Take, eat. This is My body,** which is broken for you. Do this to call Me [affectionately] to remembrance. 25 Similarly when supper was ended, He took the cup also, saying, This cup is the new covenant [ratified and established] in My blood. Do this, as often as you drink [it], to call Me [affectionately] to remembrance. 26 For every time you eat this bread and drink this cup, you are representing and signifying and proclaiming the fact of the Lord’s death until He comes [again].”

As we study these passages we note some very interesting **wordplay** – the exact word chosen by Y’shua [Jesus] are an indication of the **restoration** of mankind.

Note the words of Eve:

- She **took** the fruit of the tree,
- **Gave it to Adam,**
- And **ate** with him.

Genesis 3:6 “6 And when the woman saw that the tree was good (suitable, pleasant) for food and that it was delightful to look at, and a tree to be desired in order to make one wise, **she took of its fruit and ate; and she gave some also to her husband, and he ate.**”

Now let's look at the words of Y'shua [Jesus]:

- Y'shua [Jesus] **takes** the bread and cup,
- **Gives it to His disciples,**
- And tells them to **eat and drink.**

Every time that we celebrate the Covenant Meal, we are making a prophetic declaration that man has been restored and can re-enter the Garden of Eden-The Promised Land-The New Jerusalem.

Hebraic Words for fasting ...

Interestingly, the Hebrew language seems to really only use **one** word to describe the concept of fasting.

Strong's 6684/85 – “tsum/tsome” – meaning “to cover over” or “to fast”. The pictorial understanding of these letters reveals the following:

- **TS** [Tzade] = bowing in submission to his father; to receive a blessing; a righteous man.
- **M** [Mem] = a cresting wave; a river of life.

The pictorial image is therefore a righteous man who covers his sins by fasting, bowing before his father as he is carried on the River of Life to a new beginning.

This is indeed a powerful image of the **purpose and goal** of fasting!

It is not about our lack of food, hunger, or pain – but **about a prophetic action** to bring **restoration** between us and God. We need to take note of the action words which describes “how” and “why”.

- *To call and/or proclaim a fast.*

1 Kings 21:9-12 “9 And in the letters she said, Proclaim a fast and set Naboth up high among the people. 10 And set two men, base fellows, before him, and let them bear witness against him, saying, You cursed and renounced God and the king. Then carry him out and stone him to death. 11 And the men of his city, the elders and the nobles who dwelt there, did as Jezebel had directed in the letters sent them. 12 They **proclaimed a fast** and set Naboth on high among the people.”

Jeremiah 36:9 “9 And in the fifth year of Jehoiakim son of Josiah king of Judah, in the ninth month, **a fast was proclaimed before the Lord** for all the people in Jerusalem and all the people who came to Jerusalem from the cities of Judah.”

- *To sanctify a fast.*

Joel 1:14 “14 **Sanctify a fast**, call a solemn assembly, gather the elders and all the inhabitants of the land in the house of the Lord, your God, and cry to the Lord [in penitent pleadings].”

Joel 2:15 “15 Blow the trumpet in Zion; **set apart a fast** [a day of restraint and humility]; call a solemn assembly.”

- *To keep a fast.*

2 Samuel 12:16 “16 David therefore besought God for the child; and **David fasted** and went in and lay all night [repeatedly] on the floor.”

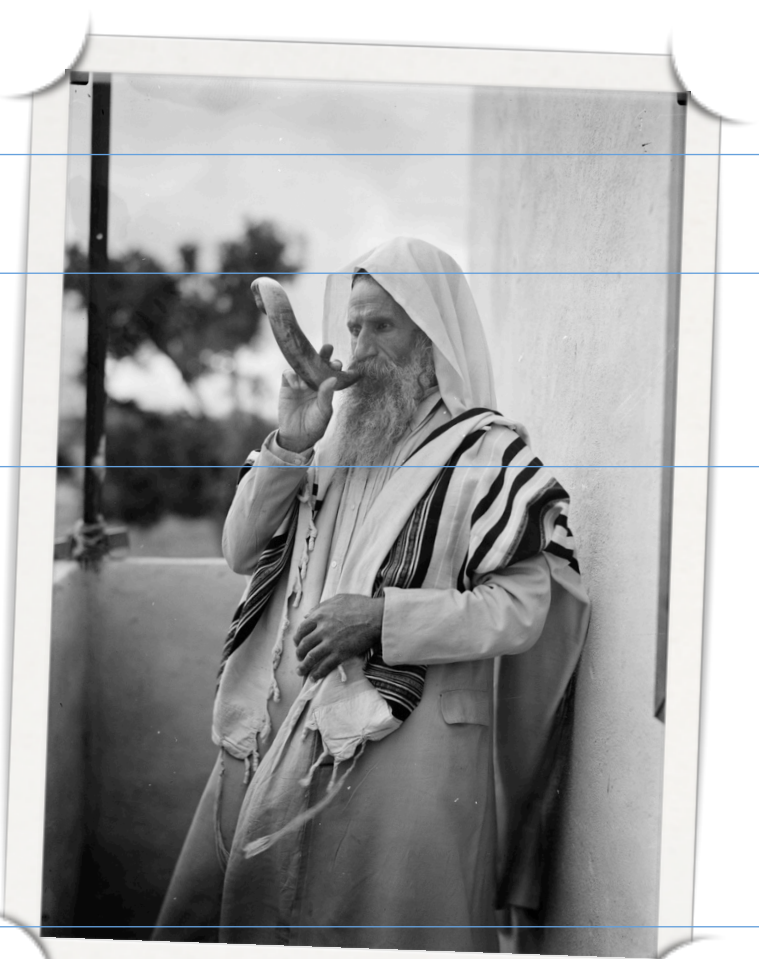
We need to take note of the words which describe **what** we need to feel and experience. Also note that, while it is the body that lacks the food, it seems clear that the **target of the fast** is the **soul**.

- *To afflict one's soul.*

Leviticus 16:29-31 “29 It shall be a statute to you forever that in the seventh month [nearly October] on the tenth day of the month you **shall afflict yourselves [by fasting with penitence and humiliation]** and do no work at all, either the native-born or the stranger who dwells temporarily among you. 30 For on this day atonement shall be made for you, to cleanse you; from all your sins you shall be clean before the Lord. 31 It is a sabbath of [solemn] rest to you, and you shall afflict yourselves [by fasting with penitence and humiliation]; it is a statute forever.”

- *To humble one soul.*

Psalms 35:13 “13 But as for me, when they were sick, my clothing was sackcloth; I **afflicted myself with fasting**, and I prayed with head bowed on my breast.”



Isaiah 58:3-5 “3 **Why have we fasted**, they say, and You do not see it? Why have we afflicted ourselves, and You take no knowledge [of it]? Behold [O Israel], on the day of your fast [when you should be grieving for your sins], you find profit in your business, and [instead of stopping all work, as the law implies you and your workmen should do] you extort from your hired servants a full amount of labor. 4 [The facts are that] you fast only for strife and debate and to smite with the fist of wickedness. Fasting as you do today will not cause your voice to be heard on high. 5 **Is such a fast as yours what I have chosen, a day for a man to humble himself with sorrow in his soul?** [Is true fasting merely mechanical?] Is it only to bow down his head like a bulrush and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him [to indicate a condition of heart that he does not have]? Will you call this a fast and an acceptable day to the Lord?”

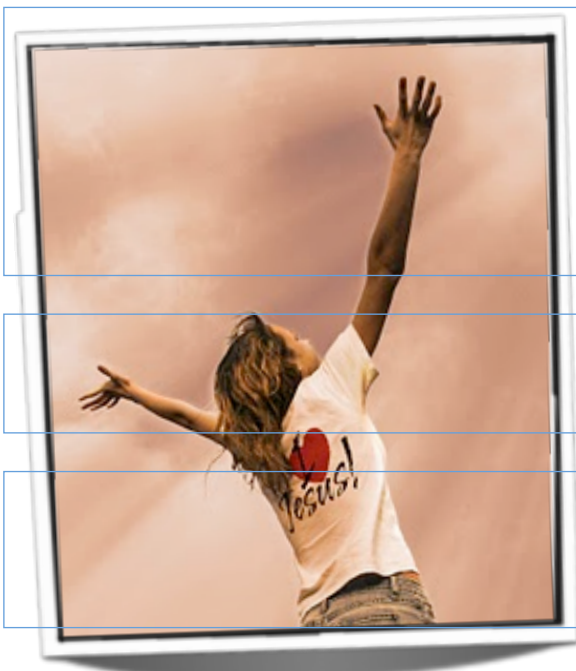
Some indications of when we should/could fast:

- *As a sign of grief.*

Judges 20:26 “26 Then all the Israelites, the whole army, went up and came to the house of God [Bethel] **and wept**; and they sat there before the Lord **and fasted** that day until evening and offered burnt offerings and peace offerings before the Lord.”

Joel 2:12-15 “12 Therefore also now, says the Lord, turn and keep on coming to Me with all your heart, **with fasting, with weeping, and with mourning** [until every hindrance is removed and the broken fellowship is restored]. 13 Rend your hearts and not your garments and return to the Lord, your God, for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and abounding in loving-kindness; and He revokes His sentence of evil [when His conditions are met]. 14 **Who knows but what He will turn, revoke your sentence [of evil], and leave a blessing behind Him** [giving you the means with which to serve Him], even a cereal or meal offering and a drink offering for the Lord, your God? 15 Blow the trumpet in Zion; **set apart a fast** [a day of restraint and humility]; call a solemn assembly.”

- *As a sign of repentance.*



1 Samuel 7:5-6 “5 Samuel said, Gather all Israel to Mizpah and I will pray to the Lord for you. 6 So they gathered at Mizpah and drew water and poured it out before the Lord and **fasted on that day and said there, We have sinned against the Lord.** And Samuel judged the Israelites at Mizpah.”

2 Samuel 12:16 “16 David therefore **besought** God for the child; and David **fasted** and went in and lay all night [repeatedly] on the floor.”

Nehemiah 9:1 “**NOW ON** the twenty-fourth day of this month, the Israelites were assembled with **fasting** and in **sackcloth** and with earth upon their heads.”

Joel 1:14 “14 **Sanctify a fast**, call a solemn assembly, gather the elders and all the inhabitants of the land in the house of the Lord, your God, and cry to the Lord [in penitent pleadings].”

Jonah 3:5 “5 So the people of Nineveh believed in God and **proclaimed a fast** and put on sackcloth [in penitent mourning], from the greatest of them even to the least of them.”

- *As an aid to prayer.*

Daniel 9:19 “19 **O Lord, hear! O Lord, forgive!** O Lord, give heed and act! Do not delay, for Your own sake, O my God, because Your city and Your people are called by Your name.”

Daniel 10:1-3 “IN THE third year of Cyrus king of Persia a word was revealed to Daniel, who was called Belteshazzar. And the word was true and it referred to great tribulation (conflict and wretchedness). And he understood the word and had understanding of the vision. 2 In those days I, Daniel, was mourning for three whole weeks. 3 **I ate no pleasant or desirable food, nor did any meat or wine come into my mouth; and I did not anoint myself at all for the full three weeks.**”

Psalms 109:21-24 “21 But You deal with me and act for me, O God the Lord, for Your name’s sake; because Your mercy and loving-kindness are good, O deliver me. 22 For I am poor and needy, and my heart is wounded and stricken within me. 23 I am gone like the shadow when it lengthens and declines; I toss up and down and am shaken off as the locust. 24 **My knees are weak and totter from fasting; and my body is gaunt and has no fatness.**”

- *To recognize God’s Presence.*

1 Kings 19:7-8 “7 The angel of the Lord came the second time and touched him and said, Arise and eat, for the journey is too great for you. 8 So he arose and ate and drank, and **went in the strength of that food forty days and nights to Horeb, the mount of God.**”

Malachi 4:4-6 “4 [Earnestly] remember the law of Moses, My servant, the statutes and the ordinances which I commanded him on [Mount] Horeb [to give] to all Israel. 5 **Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and terrible day of the Lord comes.** 6 And he shall turn and reconcile the hearts of the [estranged] fathers to the [ungodly] children, and the hearts of the [rebellious] children to [the piety of] their fathers [a reconciliation produced by repentance of the ungodly], lest I come and smite the land with a curse and a ban of utter destruction.”

- *As an act of public worship.*

Zechariah 8:19 “19 Thus says the Lord of hosts: **The fast of the fourth month and the fast of the fifth, the fast of the seventh and the fast of the tenth, shall be to the house of Judah times of joy and gladness and cheerful, appointed seasons; therefore [in order that this may happen to you, as the condition of fulfilling the promise] love truth and peace.**”

- *As a Nazirite vow.*

Numbers 6:1-21 **"AND THE Lord said to Moses, 2 Say to the Israelites, When either a man or a woman shall make a special vow, the **vow of a Nazirite**, that is, one separated and consecrated to the Lord, 3 He shall **separate himself from wine and strong drink; he shall drink no vinegar of wine or of strong drink, and shall drink no grape juice, or eat grapes, fresh or dried.** 4 All the days of his separation he shall eat nothing produced from the grapevine, not even the seeds or the skins."**

What is a Nazirite¹⁶ vow?

Nazirite is the name of such Israelites as took on the vow prescribed in Numbers 6:2-21. The word denotes generally one who is separated from others and consecrated to God. Although there is no mention of any Nazirite before Samson, it is evident that they existed before the time of Moses. The vow of a Nazirite involved these three things:

- Abstinence from wine and strong drink,
- Refraining from cutting the hair off the head during the whole period of the continuance of the vow,
- And the avoidance of contact with the dead.

When the period of the continuance of the vow came to an end, the Nazirite had to present himself at the door of the sanctuary with:

- A he lamb of the first year for a burnt-offering.
- A ewe lamb of the first year for a sin-offering.
- A ram for a peace-offering.

After these sacrifices were offered by the priest, the Nazirite cut off his hair at the door and threw it into the fire under the peace-offering.



Probably in the midst of his work at Corinth, Paul took on the Nazirite vow. This could only be terminated by his going up to Jerusalem to offer up the hair which till then was to be left uncut. But it seems to have been allowable for persons at a distance to cut the hair, which was to be brought up to Jerusalem, where the ceremony was completed. This Paul did at Cenchrea just before setting out on his voyage into Syria (Acts 18:18). On another occasion (Acts 21:23-26), at the feast of Pentecost, Paul again took on the Nazirite vow.

¹⁶ Definition and information on the Nazirite vow taken from <http://www.christiananswers.net/dictionary/nazarite.html>

As to the duration of a Nazarite's vow, every one was left at liberty to fix his own time. There is mention made in Scripture of only three who were Nazarites for life:

- Samson (Judges 13:4-5),
- Samuel (1 Samuel 1:11)
- And John the Baptist (Luke 1:15).

The vow was a symbol of a life devoted to God and separated from all sin – a holy life.

“New Wine – Old Wine”¹⁷

Most believers are familiar with the encounter Y’shua [Jesus] had with the scribes and Pharisees when He went to dinner at Levi, the publican's house. The religious leaders were upset. Y’shua [Jesus], Who claimed to be a teacher from God, was violating the Pharisaic rules that required frequent fasting and prohibited eating with publicans and sinners. They first confronted His disciples about the prohibited dinner arrangements, then when Y’shua [Jesus] answered their charges, they confronted Him about the fasting.

*Luke 5:30-39 “30 Now the Pharisees and their scribes were grumbling against Jesus’ disciples, saying, Why are you eating and drinking with tax collectors and [preeminently] sinful people? 31 And Jesus replied to them, It is not those who are healthy who need a physician, but those who are sick. 32 I have not come to arouse and invite and call the righteous, but the erring ones (those not free from sin) to repentance [to change their minds for the better and heartily to amend their ways, with abhorrence of their past sins]. 33 Then they said to Him, **The disciples of John practice fasting often and offer up prayers of [special] petition, and so do [the disciples] of the Pharisees also, but Yours eat and drink.** 34 And Jesus said to them, Can you make the wedding guests fast as long as the bridegroom is with them? 35 But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them; and then they will fast in those days. 36 He told them a proverb also: No one puts a patch from a new garment on an old garment; if he does, he will both tear the new one, and the patch from the new [one] will not match the old [garment]. 37 And no one pours new wine into old wineskins; if he does, the fresh wine will burst the skins and it will be spilled and the skins will be ruined (destroyed). 38 But new wine must be put into fresh wineskins. 39 And no one after drinking old wine immediately desires new wine, for he says, The old is good or better.”*

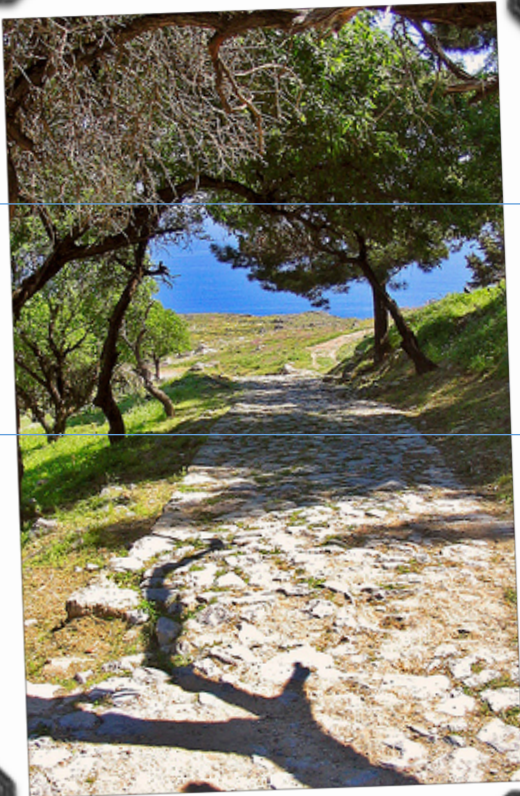
This parable is usually interpreted to mean that Y’shua [Jesus] compared the new wine with the new covenant in Him, and the old wine with the old covenant of the TaNaKh. The common understanding of the comparison is that the new is a better covenant than the old. But is this an accurate understanding based on the Biblical concepts of old and new, and in light of what was occurring in Y’shua's [Jesus’] time?

Let's take this encounter a step at a time and see what we can learn.

¹⁷ Article written by Jon Thompson

The scribes were the doctors of the law. Today we would call them attorneys. They were responsible for interpreting the Torah. They were supposed to interpret the Torah correctly. But as often happens when political intrigue, money, power, and influence are involved, their interpretations were not always accurate. During this period, they had a tendency to favor politically correct interpretations.

The Pharisees were a sect of religious leaders – the clergy. Their job was to keep Israel in the path of Torah. They also gave in to pressure and developed a set of rules and beliefs that were not in the Torah, and at times, their rules violated the actual Torah. They succumbed to the same influences as the scribes.



During the first century in Judea, the doctrines that the scribes and Pharisees taught were new. They were the modern teachings. The Hebrews considered the teachings of YHVH in the TaNaKh to be the old paths.

*Jeremiah 6:16 “16 Thus says the Lord: Stand by the roads and look; and **ask for the eternal paths, where the good, old way is; then walk in it, and you will find rest for your souls. But they said, We will not walk in it!**”*

People in Judea at the time of the Master were like people today. They were mesmerized by new-age teachings: New-age insights into who or what God is, and the modern path to spiritual growth. These new ideas were the rage among many of the educated as well as the common folk. These ideas inspired by Greek mythology were different from the Scriptural teachings and many well-educated people were deceived.

The scribes and Pharisees made the first charge against Y’shua’s [Jesus’] disciples:

*Luke 5:30 “30 Now the Pharisees and their scribes were grumbling against Jesus’ disciples, saying, **Why are you eating and drinking with tax collectors and [preeminently] sinful people?**”*

We aren’t told how it came about, but the disciples didn’t answer, Y’shua [Jesus] did. He said, “*Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are seriously ill. I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.*”

He divides two groups: Those who are well—and the seriously ill. He equates the well with the righteous, and the seriously ill with the sinners. Some teach that Y’shua [Jesus] was being sarcastic to the Pharisees about their self-righteousness.

I think we would do well to accept Y'shua [Jesus] at His word. There are righteous/well people, and there are wicked/seriously ill people. This agrees with the parable that there is more rejoicing over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous people who don't need to repent.

*Luke 15:7 "7 Thus, I tell you, **there will be more joy in heaven over one [especially] wicked person who repents** (changes his mind, abhorring his errors and misdeeds, and determines to enter upon a better course of life) than over ninety-nine righteous persons who have no need of repentance."*

So this first part we have seriously ill/wicked people that Y'shua [Jesus] came to call to repentance. Repentance in the Scriptures always means to "move from" – being far away from the Torah by disobeying it, "to coming near" and obeying it. The Hebrew word **t'shuvah**, translated as **repentance** means "to turn around". You were going the wrong way, now turn and go the right way. Y'shua [Jesus] told them directly what His job was – return the lost to the Torah.

The Pharisees had rules against eating with sinners and publicans. They were upset because Y'shua [Jesus] wasn't following their rules. But the Torah doesn't forbid eating with the children of Israel who have gone astray. So we have conflict between the Torah and the new traditions.

The Pharisees directed the next complaint to Y'shua [Jesus]:

*Luke 5:33 "33 Then they said to Him, The disciples of John practice fasting often and offer up prayers of [special] petition, and so do [the disciples] of the Pharisees also, but Yours eat and drink. 34 **And Jesus said to them, Can you make the wedding guests fast as long as the bridegroom is with them?** 35 But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them; and then they will fast in those days."*

As part of their new doctrine, the Pharisees established regular weekly fast days. But in the Torah and the TaNaKh, fasting had a specific purpose—as a response to grief, to repent, or to seek a special response from YHVH. There is no direction in the Scriptures to fast often. But the Pharisees made frequent fasting a requirement. Is it wrong to fast regularly? Probably not, John's disciples did, but don't try to convince others the Torah commanded it.

Again, we have a conflict between the new teachings of the Pharisees and the old instruction of the Torah.

Y'shua [Jesus] warned about the new teachings of the Pharisees—their leaven, in Matthew 16:6. He labeled the Pharisees hypocrites. Leaven does the same thing for wine that it does for bread it causes carbon dioxide gas to form.

In bread, because of the closed-cell elasticity of the dough, the lump expands. In wine, the gas produced by the yeast is released from the liquid and causes pressure on the container that can burst old wineskins. The action of the yeast is the same. It consumes sugars and produces gas and alcohol. Today we have special yeasts for winemaking, but in Y'shua's [Jesus'] day, they might have used the same strain of yeast for both bread and wine. So he tied both examples of leavening action to the Pharisees.

People usually look at this parable and make the connection that the old is bad and the new is good. But if we look at the term old as the Scriptures do—as that which is established – the Torah – then we can see that if we try to put the new doctrines of the Pharisees based in Greek-inspired teachings into the old wineskin of the Torah, the leavening will burst the skin. As a connected side note, Torah scrolls were written on skins. They contain the old wine—the Words of YHVH.

The old are the instructions of the Torah. The new are the doctrines of men that crept into Israel to replace the instructions of YHVH. As Y'shua [Jesus] described it, no one having drunk old wine—the Torah, straightway desires the new, for He says the old is better. When we have a solid foundation in the Torah, we don't desire the new philosophies and doctrines of men that sound good but don't line up with YHVH's Instructions.

In Y'shua's [Jesus'] day, the pharisaical teachings were new in Israel. They developed in Judaism in the prior hundred years or so by mixing the Torah with new-age Greek philosophy. The old was the Torah, and Y'shua [Jesus] taught the Torah—old things, the old paths—are good. The Pharisees taught new things—the newly formulated manmade paths—are evil. They lead away from Torah.

The scribes and Pharisees asked Y'shua [Jesus]: Why do you eat with sinners, why don't your disciples fast? Where do we find these prohibitions and instructions in the Torah? We don't—they are new teachings from the Pharisees. They forbade their disciples to eat with certain people, and required them to fast often. But their manmade disciplines were part of what Y'shua [Jesus] criticized the religious leaders about—teaching doctrines and traditions of men that were not from the Torah and in many cases violated the commandments.

It may be that the common understanding of the parable of the new wine versus the old wine turns the Words of Y'shua [Jesus] on their head. Was Y'shua [Jesus] actually warning the scribes and Pharisees? Don't try to put onto the Torah and Him all of the new-age teachings and say they come from the Torah or that they have the same status as the Words of YHVH. By doing so, you will split apart the Torah and both the Words of YHVH and those who follow the Torah will be lost.



There are enough examples in the TaNaKh that show what happens when the people of Israel abandon the Torah. YHVH sent the prophets to warn about the consequences of replacing the Torah with pleasant sounding but incorrect doctrines. When the civil and religious leaders didn't listen, YHVH sent other nations to discipline Israel.

The new teachings of the Pharisees were appealing and sounded logical. Many of the followers of YHVH who were not diligent to study, guard and understand the words of the Torah followed these new doctrines and teachings. The new ideas clouded the correct understanding of the Torah. Israel as a nation again forgot how vital obeying the Torah was for their preservation. Y'shua [Jesus] warned them that leaving the instructions of the Torah would cause the people to go astray and be lost to wander in strange paths.

These new teachings are still expanding and trying to add to the Torah. It is all part of the leavening of politically motivated religious leaders. Leaven puffs up bread or wine. If injected into the skin of the Torah, the expanding leaven of the new teachings will burst it. It's one thing to teach traditions and doctrines of men, but don't clothe them in the authority of Torah or you will lose both the Torah and your new teachings.

Getting our spiritual weight right ...



*Isaiah 58:6-8 "6 [Rather] is not this the fast that I have chosen: **to loose the bonds of wickedness, to undo the bands of the yoke, to let the oppressed go free, and that you break every [enslaving] yoke?** 7 Is it not to divide your bread with the hungry and bring the homeless poor into your house—when you see the naked, **that you cover him**, and that you hide not yourself from [the needs of] your own flesh and blood? 8 Then shall your **light break forth like the morning**, and your healing (your restoration and the power of a new life) shall **spring forth speedily**; your righteousness (your rightness, your justice, and your right relationship with God) shall go before you [conducting you to peace and prosperity], and the **glory of the Lord shall be your rear guard.***

In this Scripture, God says He has chosen fasts that:

- Loosen the bonds of wickedness.
- Undo heavy burdens.
- Let the oppressed go free.
- Break every yoke.



- Give bread to the hungry and provide the poor with housing.
- Allow the people's light to break forth like the morning.
- Cause their health to spring forth speedily.
- Cause their righteousness to go before them.
- Cause the glory of the LORD to be their reward (or "rear guard").

Nine Fasts God uses . . .

To better illustrate and reveal the significance of these nine reasons for fasting, we have chosen nine biblical characters whose lives personified the literal or figurative theme of each of the nine aspects highlighted in Isaiah 58: 6-8. Each fast has a different name, accomplishes a different purpose, and follows a different prescription.

We do not want to suggest that the nine fasts we are about to explore are the only kinds of fasts available to the believer, or that they are totally separate from each other.

Nor do we want to suggest that there is only one type of fast for a particular problem. These suggested fasts are models to use and adjust to your own particular needs and desires as you seek to grow closer to God. What follows is a brief overview of the nine fasts.

1. The **DISCIPLE'S** fast.

*Matthew 17:21 "21 But this kind does not go out except by prayer and **fasting**."*

- Purpose – To loose the bands of wickedness, freeing others and ourselves from addictions to sin.
- Background – Y'shua [Jesus] cast out a demon from a boy whom the disciples had failed to help. Apparently they had not taken seriously enough the way Satan had his claws set in the youth. The implication is that Messiah's disciples could have performed this exorcism had they been willing to undergo the discipline of fasting. Modern disciples also often make light of "besetting sins" that could be cast out if we were serious enough to take part in such a self-denying practice as fasting – hence the term "Disciple's Fast".

2. The **EZRA** Fast.

*Ezra 8:23 "23 So we **fasted** and besought our God for this, and He heard our entreaty."*



- Purpose – To undo the heavy burdens, to solve problems, inviting the Holy Spirit's aid in lifting loads and overcoming barriers that keep our loved ones and us from walking joyfully with the LORD.
- Background – Ezra the priest was charged with restoring the Torah among the people of Israel as they rebuilt the city of Jerusalem by permission of Artaxerxes, king of Persia, where God's people had been held captive. Despite this permission, Israel's enemies opposed them. Burdened with embarrassment about having to ask the Persian king for an army to protect them, Ezra fasted and prayed for an answer.

3. The **SAMUEL** Fast.

*1 Samuel 7:6 “6 So they gathered at Mizpah and drew water and poured it out before the Lord and **fasted** on that day and said there, We have sinned against the Lord. And Samuel judged the Israelites at Mizpah.”*

- Purpose – To let the oppressed (physically and spiritually) go free, for revival and soul winning, to identify with people everywhere enslaved literally or by sin and to pray to be used of God to bring people out of the kingdom of darkness and into God’s Marvelous Light.
- Background – Samuel led God’s people in a fast to celebrate the return of the Ark of the Covenant from its captivity by the Philistines, and to pray that Israel might be delivered from the sin that allowed the Ark to be captured in the first place.

4. The **ELIJAH** Fast.

*1 Kings 19:4, 18 “4 But he himself went a day’s journey into the **wilderness and came and sat down under a lone broom or juniper tree and asked that he might die.** He said, It is enough; now, O Lord, take away my life; for I am no better than my fathers. 18 Yet I will leave Myself 7,000 in Israel, all the knees that have not bowed to Baal and every mouth that has not kissed him.”*

- Purpose – To break every yoke, conquering the mental and emotional problems that would control our lives, and returning the control to the LORD.
- Background – Although Scripture does not call this a normal “fast”, Elijah deliberately went without food when he fled from Queen Jezebel’s threat to kill him. After this self-imposed deprivation, God sent an angel to minister to Elijah in the wilderness.

5. The **WIDOW’S** Fast.

*1 Kings 17:16 “16 The **jar of meal was not spent** nor did the bottle of oil fail, according to the word which the Lord spoke through Elijah.”*

- Purpose – To share [our] bread with the hungry and to care for the poor, to meet the humanitarian needs of others.
- Background – God sent the prophet Elijah to a poor, starving widow – ironically, so the widow could provide food for Elijah. Just as Elijah’s presence resulted in food for the widow of Zarephath, so presenting ourselves before God in prayer and fasting can relieve hunger today.

6. **PAUL’S** Fast.

*Acts 9:9 “9 And he was unable to see for three days, and he **neither ate nor drank [anything].**”*

- Purpose – To allow God’s Light to break forth like the morning, bringing clearer perspective and insight as we make crucial decisions.
- Background: Saul of Tarsus, who became known as Paul after his acceptance of Y’shua [Jesus] as Messiah, was struck blind by the LORD in the act of persecuting Christians. He not only was without literal sight, but he also had no clue about what direction his life was to take. After going without food and praying for three days, Paul was visited by the Ananias, and both his eyesight and his vision of the future were restored.



7. The **DANIEL** Fast.

*Daniel 1:8 “8 But Daniel determined in his heart that he would **not defile himself by [eating his portion of] the king’s rich and dainty food** or by [drinking] the wine which he drank; therefore he requested of the chief of the eunuchs that he might [be allowed] not to defile himself. [Num. 6:1-4; I Cor. 10:21.]”*

- Purpose – So thine health shall spring forth, to gain a healthier life or for healing.
- Background – Daniel and his three fellow Hebrew captives demonstrated in Babylonian captivity that keeping themselves from pagan foods God had guided them not to eat, made them more healthful than others in the king’s court.

8. The **JOHN THE BAPTIST** Fast.

*Luke 1:15 “15 For he will be great and distinguished in the sight of the Lord. And **he must drink no wine nor strong drink**, and he will be filled with and controlled by the Holy Spirit even in and from his mother’s womb. [Num. 6:3.]”*

- Purpose – That your righteousness shall go before you, that our testimonies and influence for Y’shua [Jesus] will be enhanced before others.

- Background – Because John the Baptist was the forerunner of Y'shua [Jesus], he took the Nazirite vow that required him to “fast” from or avoid wine and strong drink. This was part of John’s purposefully adopted lifestyle that designated him as one set apart for a special mission.

9. The **ESTHER** Fast.

*Esther 4:16 “16 Go, gather together all the Jews that are present in Shushan, and **fast** for me; and **neither eat nor drink** for three days, night or day. I also and my maids will **fast** as you do. Then I will go to the king, though it is against the law; and if I perish, I perish.”*



*Esther 5:2 “2 And when the king saw Esther the queen standing in the court, **she obtained favor in his sight**, and he held out to [her] the golden scepter that was in his hand. So Esther drew near and touched the tip of the scepter.”*

- Purpose – That the glory of the LORD will protect us from the evil one.
- Background – Queen Esther, a Jewess in a pagan court, risked her life to save her people from threatened destruction by Ahasuerus (Xerxes), king of Persia. Prior to appearing before the king to petition him to save the Jews, Esther, her attendants and her cousin Mordecai all fasted to appeal to God for His Protection.

FOUR kinds of fasting.

The nine fasts described are merely suggestive of a variety of ways to practice this helpful discipline. There are probably as many ways to fast as there are ways to pray – obviously, there is no set number in either case. The following four kinds of fasts¹⁸ are good guidelines for you to follow or modify as God directs.

1. The normal fast is going without food for a definite period during which you ingest only liquids (water and/or juice). The duration can be one day, three days, one week, one month or forty days. Extreme care should be taken with longer fasts, which should only be attempted after medical advice from your physician.
2. The absolute fast allows no food or water at all, and should be short. Moses fasted for forty days, but this would kill anyone without supernatural intervention, and should never be attempted otherwise. Be sure to test the spirit that tries to talk you into a forty day fast, even if it includes liquids.



3. The partial fast is one that omits certain foods or is on a schedule that includes limited eating. It may consist of omitting one meal a day. Eating only fresh vegetables for several days is also a good partial fast. John Wesley ate only whole grain bread and water for many days. Elijah practiced partial fasts at least twice. John the Baptist and Daniel with his three friends are other examples of those who participated in partial fasts. People who have hypoglycemia or other diseases might consider this kind of fast.

¹⁸ Taken from "What The Bible Says About Healthy Living" by Dr. Rex Russell [Regal Books, 1996].

4. A rotational fast consists of eating or omitting certain families of food for designated periods. For example, grains may be eaten only every fourth day. The various food families are rotated so that some food is fasted.

Petitions.

What is a *petition*¹⁹?

A petition is a written prayer, which acts almost like a legal document. The use of petitions is a very effective form of prayer and warfare. We encourage you to study the points below, and to then write your own petition, based on these guidelines. Ask the Holy Spirit to lead you ... always remember He is our Perfect Counsellor and will lead us into all Truth!

*1 Timothy 2:1 “1 FIRST OF all, then, I admonish and urge that **petitions, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings** be offered on behalf of all men,”*



We see that petitions are one of the four different forms of prayer. It is vital that we make use of this weapon in our pursuit of God's Fullness for our lives.

There are three Hebrew – **shelah** [Strong's 7596]; **mishalah** [Strong's 4862]; **bagga shah** [Strong's 1245/6] – words translated as **petition**. The words have the meaning of “to ask, beg, borrow, lay to charge, consult, demand, desire earnestly, inquire, pray, request, require, petition, or wish”.

¹⁹ For additional study, see our book “*Petitions*” available from the website or for order from the office.

We've seen that each letter of the Hebrew aleph-bet has its own "picture-form". When these picture-forms are put together – as used in a word – we get a deeper understanding of the word and its meaning. Let's have a look at the picture-forms of the Hebrew word for "petition", spelled SH-L-H:

- **Sh** [Shin] = ascending flames of fire.
- **L** [Lamed] = tongues exhorting, prodding.
- **H** [Hey] = window or opening in a tent.

Putting the picture-forms together, we understand that a "**petition**" is when our **tongue** is prodding, pushing, and **pleading** ... and the words that are spoken are likened to **flames** of fire that **reach** into the Throne Room through the **window of Heaven**".

The word **petition** has a legal connotation. We can only present our petitions before God's Throne if we stand on legal ground ... and our petitions will be granted if we find favour in God's Sight.

The question is then ... what legal ground do we have?

Our foundation is the Covenant we are partnered in with God Almighty through the Blood of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus]. This is the highest Covenant there is, where God gave us His Son, Whose Blood is the COMPLETE Sacrifice for our sins. Our FAITH in Him gives us legal right to come **boldly** before Father God.

Let's have a look at some of the Scriptures concerning the use of petitions.

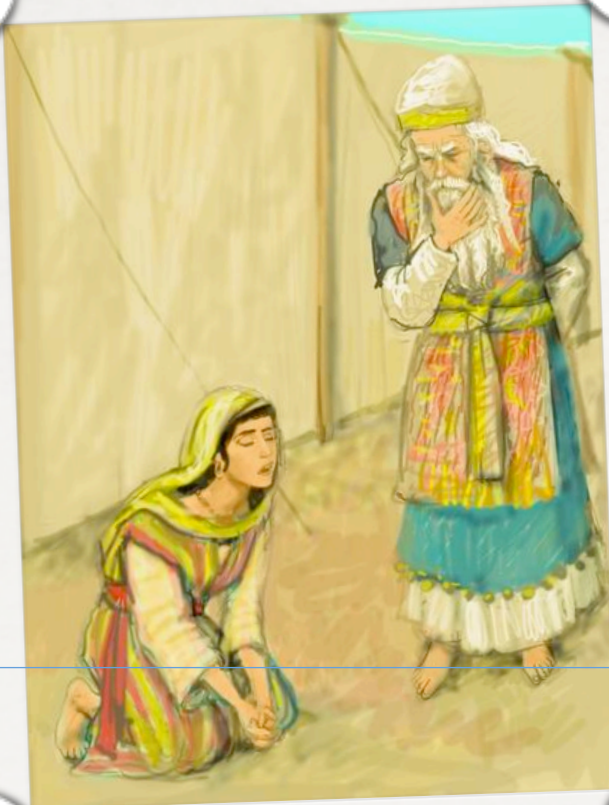
Samuel and Hannah ...

Remember the story of Hannah? She was married to and greatly loved by her husband, Elkanah ... however, Hannah was barren. Her prayer/petition was to ask the LORD to open her womb, and grant her children.

*1 Samuel 1:10-12, 17 "10 And [Hannah] was in **distress of soul, praying to the Lord and weeping bitterly.** 11 She vowed, saying, O Lord of hosts, if You will indeed look on the affliction of Your handmaid and [earnestly] remember, and not forget Your handmaid but will give me a son, I will give him to the Lord all his life; no razor shall touch his head. 12 And as she continued praying before the Lord, Eli noticed her mouth. 17 Then Eli said, Go in peace, and may the God of Israel grant your **petition** which you have asked of Him."*

Eli calls Hannah's prayer before the Lord a **petition**.

*1 Samuel 1:15-16 "15 But Hannah answered, No, my lord, I am a woman of a sorrowful spirit. I have drunk neither wine nor strong drink, but **I was pouring out my soul before the Lord.** 16 Regard not your handmaid as a wicked woman; **for out of my great complaint and bitter provocation I have been speaking.**"*



We see in the passage above, Hannah cried to the LORD, pouring out her soul before the Lord. She brought her **petition** before the LORD out of her great “complaint and bitter provocation”. In this account, we see the usage of the meaning of the Hebrew word **shelah** [Strong’s 7596] – specifically, “**to earnestly desire**”. Reading on to verse twenty-seven, we see the LORD granted Hannah her petition! She had found favour in His Sight! To petition, your soul **must be poured out** to the LORD. It is a cry from your heart. **The favour of the Lord comes upon those who cry from the heart to Him.**

Psalm 9:12 “12 For He Who avenges the blood [of His people shed unjustly] remembers them; He does not forget the cry of the afflicted (the poor and the humble).”

*Psalm 20:4-5 “5 We will [shout in] triumph at your salvation and victory, and in the Name of our God we will set up our banners. **May the Lord fulfill all your petitions.**”*

Let’s look at an example in Scripture when the Hebrew word **mishalah** [Strong’s 4862] is used in terms of a petition.

ADONIJAH AND BATHSHEBA ...

In the following passage, we see Adonijah, one of David’s sons, petitioning Bathsheba, seeking her influence with Solomon.

*1 Kings 2:13-18 “13 Adonijah, the son of [David and] Haggith, came to Bathsheba, the mother of Solomon. She said, Do you come peaceably? And he said, Peaceably. 14 He said, I have something to say to you. And she said, Say on. 15 He said, You know that the kingdom belonged to me [as the eldest living son], and all Israel looked to me to reign. However, the kingdom has passed from me to my brother; for it was his from the Lord. 16 Now **I make one request** of you; do not deny me. And she said, Say on. 17 He said, I pray you, ask King Solomon, for he will not refuse you, to give me Abishag the Shunammite to be my wife. 18 And Bathsheba said, Very well; I will speak for you to the king.”*

Esther ...

We all know the story of Esther – how she was born “for such a time as this” to save her people. After fasting three days, Esther is ready to speak to the king regarding her people and the edict Haman declared ... she puts on her royal robes and goes into the inner court of the king’s palace, close to his throne room. When the king saw her, she obtained favor in his sight. He asked what her request [**petition**] was and told her that he **would grant** her whatever it might be.

*Esther 5:1-8 “ON THE third day [of the fast] Esther put on her royal robes and stood in the royal or inner court of the king’s palace opposite his [throne room]. The king was sitting on his throne, facing the main entrance of the palace. 2 And when the king saw Esther the queen standing in the court, **she obtained favor in his sight**, and he held out to [her] the golden scepter that was in his hand. So Esther drew near and touched the tip of the scepter. 3 Then the king said to her, What will you have, Queen Esther? **What is your request?** It shall be given you, even to the half of the kingdom. 4 And Esther said, If it seems good to the king, let the king and Haman come this day to the dinner that I have prepared for the king. 5 Then the king said, Cause Haman to come quickly, that what Esther has said may be done. 6 So the king and Haman came to the dinner that Esther had prepared. 7 And during the serving of wine, the king said to Esther, What is your petition? It shall be granted you. And what is your request? Even to the half of the kingdom, it shall be performed. 8 Then Esther said, **My petition and my request is:** If I have found favor in the sight of the king and if it pleases the king to grant my petition and to perform my request, let the king and Haman come tomorrow to the dinner that I shall prepare for them; and I will do tomorrow as the king has said.”*

*Esther 7:2-3 “2 And the king said again to Esther on the second day when wine was being served, **What is your petition**, Queen Esther? It shall be granted. And what is your request? Even to the half of the kingdom, it shall be performed. 3 Then Queen Esther said, If I have found favor in your sight, O king and if it pleases the king, let my life be given me at my **petition** and my people at my request.”*

*Esther 9:12 “12 And the king said to Esther the queen, The Jews have slain and destroyed 500 men in Shushan, the capital, and the ten sons of Haman. What then have they done in the rest of the king’s provinces! **Now what is your petition? It shall be granted to you.** Or what is your request further? It shall be done.”*

The Bride of Messiah ...

We must also put on the Royal Robes of Righteousness. We have the legal right to do this by our FAITH in Y’shua Ha’Mashiach [Jesus Christ]! Because of what Y’shua [Jesus] has done, we can come with **boldness** into the very Throne Room of God [Esther 5:1]!

Praise be to God! We can come before the King and Kings! We know we have found favor in His Sight when we come, purified by the Blood of Messiah Y’shua [Jesus].

We need to search our hearts and confess all known sin. ALL sin, including standing in the gap for the sins committed by our ancestors, must be brought under the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus].

*Psalm 24: 3-4 "3 Who shall go up into the mountain of the Lord? Or who shall stand in His Holy Place? 4 **He who has clean hands and a pure heart, who has not lifted himself up to falsehood or to what is false, nor sworn deceitfully.**"*

A RHEMA – a live, vibrant, energized, and personal – word from God, **based on the Scriptures**, concerning our specific request [petition] is also part of the legal ground and platform we need to present our petition.



Steps to writing a petition ...

STEP ONE – Our petitions start with a **declaration of Who our God IS**. Our God is the God of Israel, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob ... God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. This declaration is like a trumpet call in the heavenlies.

*Numbers 10:9 "9 When you go to war in your land against the enemy that oppresses you, then blow an alarm with the trumpets, **that you may be remembered before the Lord your God, and you shall be saved from your enemies.**"*

In the verse above, we see that a trumpet call causes God to remember us and to causes His Favor and Grace to shine upon us. This we truly need to have VICTORY over the enemy.

STEP TWO – **State the legal ground** we stand on ... our faith in the Covenantal Promises of God, through the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus].

STEP THREE – Now we can state our **specific request**. This can be for marriage, children, salvation of a loved one, protection during a certain time, finances, spiritual break through and growth, memories to surface, or any roots hidden that blocks God's Fullness, SHALOM, in our lives.

Note! Every petition will be **unique**. For each petition one needs to search the Scriptures and ask God and the Holy Spirit to give you a RHEMA word for your specific requests. This is part of the effectiveness of petitioning. It is NOT a formula or recipe ... but your heart being poured out to your Father King.

STEP FOUR – Sign the petition and get someone to stand in agreement with you. Use the Covenant Meal as a prophetic symbol of the Covenant. Declare the petition SEALED with the Blood of the Lamb! Always write the DATE to establish the petition in the heavens, the earth, the waters, and under the earth!

Prayer of Agreement ...

*Matthew 18:18-20 “18 Truly I tell you, whatever you forbid and declare to be improper and unlawful on earth must be what is already forbidden in heaven, and whatever you permit and declare proper and lawful on earth must be what is already permitted in heaven. 19 Again I tell you, **if two of you on earth agree** (harmonize together, make a symphony together) about whatever [anything and everything] they may ask, **it will come to pass and be done for them by My Father in heaven.** 20 For wherever two or three are gathered (drawn together as My followers) in (into) My name, there I AM in the midst of them. [Exod. 3:14.]”*

The Scriptures assures us that if we stand in agreement with God's Will in His Word, as well as where two or three of us agree about whatever we ask, He WILL grant us our request.

The following is an example of an introduction to a petition.

Example of a petition ...

Father God of Israel, in the Name in Y'shua [Jesus] Your Son, I humbly come into Your Presence. As Judge of the Universe, I petition You to allow me to bring my case to Your Court. I ask You to judge between _____ [state your case] and satan.

Father, I proclaim that I come before You under the covering of the Precious Blood of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] and by FAITH I have been made righteous.

I declare by faith in Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] of Nazareth that I am part of the House of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and therefore included into the Covenantal Promises. It is on these grounds of the faith that You are MY Stronger Partner in the Covenant which You originally made with Abraham, that I present my petition before You with boldness.

Amen!

In this section following the introduction of the petition, always use the RHEMA Word – based on the Scriptures – that the Holy Spirit has given you concerning your situation and request.

The following are some Scriptures concerning some common petitions:

Marriage.	Hebrews 13:4 1 Corinthians 7:13-14
Loved ones to be saved.	Jude 23 2 Peter 3:9 2 Corinthians 4:4
Safety and protection.	Psalms 91 Jeremiah 15:20-21
Memories to surface.	Luke 12:2-3 Exodus 23:29-30

Conclusion.

- Don't be neglectful and forget that you are in a war.
- Be offensive – not defensive. You must set the boundaries!
- Do not fight the enemy in your own power – use the weapons of God.
- Do not debate with the enemy and compromise. Every Canaanite must go!
- Do not allow fear to keep you back from war – learn David's lesson with Goliath.

*Romans 8:37 "37 Yet amid all these things **we are more than conquerors** and gain a surpassing victory through Him Who loved us."*

"God, You have given and we are taking what is ours!" Don't plead for what has already been given. Stand up, rebuke the devil, and possess the land!

Have you got problems? Finances, marriage, children, work, and so forth? Have you rebuked the devil? You must resist! You do not always have to run to others to pray for you – you must learn to stand and fight!



Part 4:
Spiritual
warfare and
the Armor of
God

Spiritual Warfare and the Armor of God.

- A look at the Early Church.

The pagan Roman society regularly attacked and physically assaulted Christians²⁰ – among their attackers were witches, astrologers, and mediums. With all the persecutions taking place, there was so much fear amongst the believers. Timothy was also very fearful and Paul encouraged him to STAND strong ...

*2 Timothy 1:7 “7 For God did not give us a spirit of timidity (of cowardice, of craven and cringing and fawning fear), **but [He has given us a spirit] of power and of love and of calm and well-balanced mind and discipline and self-control.**”*

The Roman Emperor during that time was Nero. He would hold huge meetings in a coliseum called “the Circus of Maximus”, which seated 87, 000 people. Nero burned Christians to death and the crowds watched as wild beasts would be let loose to maul the Christians to death. Gladiators publically mutilating Christians to death would entertain the crowds. This took place in the month of January as this month was dedicated to their gods. The ancient Romans found any excuse to watch a murderous event take place where Christians were involved. The worth of Christians was so low – their bodies were painted with tar and set alight to be used as lanterns to light up the roads they were building during the night. There were no morals whatsoever in the Roman Empire. They had open sex shows on stage for all to see – young Christian girls were raped on stage! Timothy was also brutally murdered!

• PERGAMOS.

The city of Pergamos was the official seat of the Proconsul of Rome. Revelations tells us about Pergamos where Satan has his seat. Above the city, high on a mountaintop, there stood a great altar to the goddess Athena. Directly below this was a huge polished marble altar and a giant throne dedicated to Zeus²¹. At the city gate stood a huge idol representing “Asklepios” [shown on the right] – a god with his serpent spirit that they worshipped for false healing.



²⁰ For additional study, see the book “Foxes’ Book Of Martyrs”.

²¹ It is interesting to note, many researchers have noted the similarity of the stage for President Obama’s acceptance speech for his party’s nomination to that of the altar of Zeus, <http://www.newswithviews.com/Horn/thomas109.htm>.

• PAUL IN ROME.

Nero wanted idols made of himself all over Rome – he craved to be worshipped. The senate refused his request and so he set the city alight. He then put the blame on Paul and so Paul was charged and chained to a Roman soldier. Paul wrote a letter from prison to the Church in Thessalonica where he described two pieces of the armor of the child of God, namely the breastplate and the helmet.

*1 Thessalonians 5:8 “8 But we belong to the day; therefore, let us be sober and **put on the breastplate (corslet) of faith and love and for a helmet the hope of salvation.**”*

Ten years later he got the revelation of the full armor of the LORD. He wrote another letter to the Church in Ephesus where he described the full armor in detail. Let's have a look ...

⇒ Ephesians Chapter 1

Here Paul teaches us about election, predestination, adoption, redemption, and the Seal of the Holy Spirit.

⇒ Ephesians Chapter 2

In this chapter, Paul teaches us: that we are rich in mercy; grace verses works; the foundation of apostles and prophets; and that we are seated with Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] in Heavenly places.

⇒ Ephesians Chapter 3 – 5.

Paul tells us that all though they were full of spiritual knowledge, information, facts, and so forth ... yet they were defeated in their personal lives. What were the problems they were facing?

- They were told to put away lying (Ephesians 4:25).
- Let not the sun go down upon your wrath.
- Neither give place to the devil.
- Let him that stole steal no more.
- Corrupt communication out of your mouth.
- Grieve not the Holy Spirit.
- Put away all bitterness, wrath, and so forth.

Paul founded the Ephesus Church, where he spent three years teaching and training them in the Word. He then appointed Timothy as the pastor. They were a very large church with many members – even John and Mary, the mother of Y'shua [Jesus], were members there. Paul taught them that they needed to take the intellectual understanding of the Word and turn it into the Sword of the Spirit. They knew the Word but they had to be trained in FAITH!

THE ARMOR OF GOD EPH. 6:10-17

The helmet of salvation

The LORD is my light
and my salvation—
whom shall I fear?

Ps. 27:1

The sword of the Spirit

For the word of God
is living and active.
Sharper than any
double-edged sword...

Heb. 4:12

The shield of faith

Who through
faith are
shielded by
God's power
until the
coming of
the salvation
that is ready
to be revealed
in the last time.

1 Peter 1:5

The breastplate of righteousness

...be found in him, not
having a righteousness
of my own that comes
from the law, but that
which is through faith
in Christ... Phil 3:9

The belt of truth

If you hold to my teaching,
you are really my disciples.
Then you will know the
truth, and the truth will
set you free. John 8:31-32

The shoes of the Gospel

How beautiful on the mountains
are the feet of those who bring
good news, who proclaim peace..

Is. 52:7



WARFARE SENSE.

We must make sure that all the doors that were opened to the enemy are closed in the Name of Y'shua [Jesus]. If we allow sin, wrong attitudes, fall into temptation, and so forth ... we are leaving gaping holes!

We must realize ... WE are then responsible! We cannot blame shift!

For example:

- Money.
 - If you fail to balance your cheque book, if you do not budget for your monthly expenses and just spend money foolishly, if you are irresponsible and do not pay your bills – you cannot shout and bind the devil!
- Your body.
 - If you abuse your body by eating junk foods, no exercises, overworking and pushing your body too hard – you are guilty!
- Marriage.
 - If you speak disrespectfully to each other, never spend time together, if you do not make your marriage a priority in life – you are guilty!

REMEMBER: There will never be peace with the devil!

Each individual has his own fight. We first must have inner victory before we can conquer the land on the outside. Canaan is a land of victory – a land of wars and victories. The devil has an individual strategy against every person. When we recognize his strategy then we can mobilize an attack against him. Our armor is both OFFENSIVE and DEFENSIVE:

- Offensive armor – shoes, sword, and spear.
- Defensive armor – breastplate, shield, and helmet.

God gave us these spiritual weapons to protect us against the attacks of the enemy. We have often heard the question: “Does armor come off?” The answer is “Yes, if you don’t live a lifestyle of holiness and obedience”.

*Ephesians 6:10-18 “10 In conclusion, be strong in the Lord [be empowered through your union with Him]; **draw your strength from Him** [that strength which His boundless might provides]. 11 **Put on God’s whole armor** [the armor of a heavy-armed soldier which God supplies], that you may be able successfully to **stand up against** [all] the strategies and the deceits of the devil. 12 For we are not wrestling with flesh and blood [contending only with physical opponents], but against the despotisms, against the powers, against [the master spirits who are] the world rulers of this present darkness, against the spirit forces of wickedness in the heavenly (supernatural) sphere.”*

“13 Therefore put on God’s complete armor, that you may be able to resist and stand your ground on the evil day [of danger], and, having done all [the crisis demands], to stand [firmly in your place]. 14 Stand therefore [hold your ground], having tightened the belt of truth around your loins and having put on the breastplate of integrity and of moral rectitude and right standing with God, 15 And having shod your feet in preparation [to face the enemy with the firm-footed stability, the promptness, and the readiness produced by the good news] of the Gospel of peace. 16 Lift up over all the [covering] shield of saving faith, upon which you can quench all the flaming missiles of the wicked [one]. 17 And take the helmet of salvation and the sword that the Spirit wields, which is the Word of God. 18 Pray at all times (on every occasion, in every season) in the Spirit, with all [manner of] prayer and entreaty. To that end keep alert and watch with strong purpose and perseverance, interceding in behalf of all the saints (God’s consecrated people).”

2 Corinthians 2:11 “11 To keep Satan from getting the advantage over us; **for we are not ignorant of his wiles and intentions.**”

1 Peter 5:8 “8 **Be well balanced** (temperate, sober of mind), be vigilant and cautious at all times; for that enemy of yours, the devil, roams around like a lion roaring [in fierce hunger], **seeking someone to seize upon and devour.**”

Each piece of armour is specific for satan’s schemes²².

1. **The Truth of God – our Belt.**



The Roman soldier wore a long linen dress. When he was relaxing, he removed the belt and the dress hung around his knees. Without the belt he would not be able to run when called into battle. When he puts on the belt, it fits in the middle of the man around his waist. What we learn from this picture is that the Word must always be central to all we do. The servant of God cannot remain standing against the kingdom of darkness until he stands upon the Truth. He must know the Word.

²² Recommended reading: “Derek Prince On Experiencing God’s Power”.

Satan does his work through deception and ignorance, therefore it is important that Truth penetrates your whole being. For example, Russia was deceived for years about the economy in the rest of the world. The enemy deceives you into believing that what you have is all you ever will have. He keeps you away from the full blessings of God.

Another example of deception is found in Judges 15:4. Samson rises up to fight for his people – he catches the foxes and ties their tails together and chases them into the grain fields of their enemies. In verse 13 we read that his own people came to tie him up and hand him over to the enemies. Samson was called and anointed as a deliverer for his people but they judged him wrongly and gave him over to the Philistines. What we learn here is that there is much resistance to the ministry of healing and deliverance.

Attack of satan:

- Satan lies:
 - About the Character of God.
 - About who you are.
 - About other people, circumstances – everything!

Counter-attack:

- God's Truth enables us to move forward in warfare. It is so important to know who you are in Messiah!
- Gird up your loins – prepare for action.

*Exodus 12:11 "11 And you shall eat it thus: [as fully prepared for a journey] **your loins girded, your shoes on your feet, and your staff in your hand; and you shall eat it in haste. It is the Lord's Passover.**"*

- Take action – be dressed in readiness.

*Luke 12: 35 "35 **Keep your loins girded and your lamps burning,**"*

- Gird up your mind.

*1 Peter 1:13 "13 So brace up your minds; be sober (circumspect, morally alert); **set your hope wholly and unchangeably on the grace** (divine favor) that is coming to you when Jesus Christ (the Messiah) is revealed."*

The belt looks like an insignificant little thing until you take it off! That is when you do not have the Truth to hold all you are together! On your belt you hang your sword! The belt was also a loin belt, which consisted of leather pieces covering your reproductive organs. This tells us that our ability to reproduce is in direct relationship to the Word of God.

The shield could also rest on the belt when they had time to rest. The belt is therefore **CENTRAL** to all the other pieces of the armour. Dress yourself daily in the Word! Don't wait for the pastor/leader to dress you every week!

2. **The Righteousness of God – the Breastplate.**

I am righteous not because of what I do ... but because of what I believe. Righteousness will cause you to stand steadfast. The problem is that so many people do not believe that they are righteous.

Attack of satan:

- Accusations.
 - The enemy will bring accusations against you from other people and/or yourself – “you are too bad to be a child of God”. Despair comes by believing satan instead of God.
- Condemnation (Romans 8:1).
 - It is necessary to **spea**k the truth. Condemnation always makes you feel guilty, that you must confess the whole day – even things you haven't done! You don't feel worthy. Remember, condemnation is never from the LORD. The Holy Spirit will bring conviction – and it will be clear [not confusing and undefined]. When we confess and repent, there will be immediate relief! If the enemy comes with his accusations and you know you have cleared your sin with the Father, then just remind satan he only has the photocopy! The original document against you has been destroyed through the Blood of the Lamb!
- Spiritual Pride.
 - Satan will force you to a place where you will trust in your own righteousness instead of in that of Messiah. He will exhaust you by driving you to pray, study, witness, and so forth. You are never too religious for satan – you only feel good if you have read “x” amount of Scriptures and prayed for “x” amount of hours. Please note, this is your own standard! You cannot become more righteous than you are now! Satan will **DRIVE** you to perform. Keep in mind, the shepherd **LEADS** and the butcher drives!



Counter-attack:

- Protection – a heart clothed in the Righteousness of God.
- Pure motives – always seeking the HONOR of God.

Malachi 2:2 “2 If you will not hear and if you will not lay it to heart to give glory to My name, says the Lord of hosts, then I will send the curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings; yes, I have already turned them to curses because you do not lay it to heart.”

Isaiah 42:8 “8 I am the Lord; that is My name! And My glory I will not give to another, nor My praise to graven images.”

- Stand in the righteousness of God – never in your own strength and power. The breastplate is very bright and shiny! When you stand before the enemy, all he can see is this SHINY light reflecting off your breastplate and it blinds him! You are shining with the Glory of the LORD! For us to be able to see the enemy, we need to put on the robe of humility over your breastplate – don't walk in your own pride! The breastplate makes you noticeable.

Romans 3:22, 25, 26 “22 Namely, the righteousness of God which comes by believing with personal trust and confident reliance on Jesus Christ (the Messiah). [And it is meant] for all who believe. For there is no distinction, 25 Whom God put forward [before the eyes of all] as a mercy seat and propitiation by His blood [the cleansing and life-giving sacrifice of atonement and reconciliation, to be received] through faith. This was to show God's righteousness, because in His divine forbearance He had passed over and ignored former sins without punishment. 26 It was to demonstrate and prove at the present time (in the now season) that He Himself is righteous and that He justifies and accepts as righteous him who has [true] faith in Jesus.”

3. The Shalom [Peace] of God - our Shoes.

The shoes of the soldiers were tight fitting. The soldiers fighting on the front line wore shoes with 7.5 cm spikes on the soles to be able to grip the ground and not be pushed over when in combat. The soldiers on the back line had 2.5 cm spikes on the soles of their shoes.

The work of the enemy is to cause confusion, strife, and division. Striving with God and man will cause you to lose your peace.

Matthew 5:11, 44 “11 Blessed (happy, to be envied, and spiritually prosperous—with life-joy and satisfaction in God's favor and salvation, regardless of your outward conditions) are you when people revile you and persecute you and say all kinds of evil things against you falsely on My account. 44 But I tell you, Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you,”

Attack of satan:

- Persecution (John 16:33),
- Lies,
 - (Points A and B are when you fight people and not the enemy!)
- Compromise,
- Passiveness,
 - (Points C and D speak of slack hands and weak knees!)



What is the lesson? Learn not to be OFFENDED!

Counter-attack:

- Always walk in the way of peace – forgive! Bind peace onto your mind as you bind the shoes to fit tightly onto your feet. When you suddenly hit a crises, you can react in PEACE and KNOW that ABBA Father is in control – no matter what! When peace is foundational in your life you will have a firm footing! Nothing that comes your way will move you! STAND FIRM!



*Matthew 12:18-20 “18 Behold, My Servant Whom I have chosen, My Beloved in and with Whom My soul is well pleased and has found its delight. **I will put My Spirit upon Him, and He shall proclaim and show forth justice to the nations.** 19 He will not strive or wrangle or cry out loudly; nor will anyone hear His voice in the streets; 20 A bruised reed He will not break, and a smoldering (dimly burning) wick He will not quench, till He brings justice and a just cause to victory.”*

•We do not wrestle against flesh and blood – we come against the power behind the person who attacks you.

•We preach a Gospel of peace. You must do the walking! Let the peace of God RULE in your minds and heart! Don't give in to your emotions!

*Romans 16:20 “20 **And the God of peace will soon crush Satan under your feet.** The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah) be with you.”*

*Joshua 1:3 “3 Every place upon which the sole of your foot shall tread, **that have I given to you, as I promised Moses.**”*

4. The Faith of God – our Shield.



The shield was attached to the belt, so is Faith attached to the Word. The soldiers had to take care of their shields. The shields were made of six layers of animal hide and had to be rubbed with a heavy oil every day otherwise they would become hard, stiff, and brittle. They also had to dip their shields in water every day to keep them pliable.

*Romans 10:17 "17 So **faith comes by hearing** [what is told], and what is heard comes by the preaching [of the message that came from the lips] of Christ (the Messiah Himself)."*

Faith comes from the Word – I must know what the Word says!

What lessons do we learn here? We need fresh anointing oil everyday! Oil for anointing and the Water of the Word to quench the fiery darts of the evil one! The Scripture in Ephesians 6:16 says,

*Ephesians 6:16 "16 Lift up over all the [covering] **shield of saving faith**, upon which you can quench all the flaming missiles of the wicked [one]."*

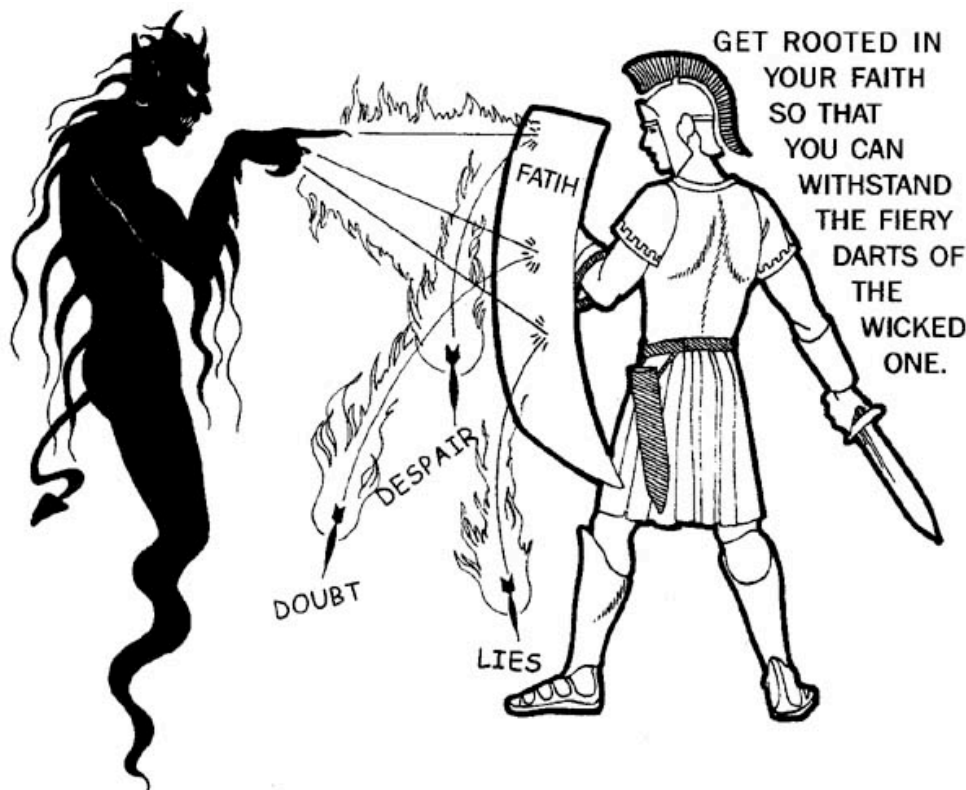
This teaches us that our faith is out front – the shield is not optional. No shield, no faith ... which leaves an open door to the enemy!

When the whole army had to march forward to attack their enemy, they would hook their shields into each other and form a solid wall of armour. When we are in corporate prayer we "hook" our shields together and start to PUSH back the enemy – STAND IN UNITY! FORM ONE WALL!

The enemy's main attack is against your faith – the enemy's strategy is to try and knock your shield and sword out of your hands. You are left then with no defense or weapon of attack! The power of God plus FAITH forms the shield.

1 Timothy 6:12 “**12 Fight the good fight of the faith; lay hold of the eternal life to which you were summoned and [for which] you confessed the good confession [of faith] before many witnesses.**”

Attack of satan:



- Unbelief (especially if answer to prayer takes too long).

Hebrews 4:2 “**2 For indeed we have had the glad tidings [Gospel of God] proclaimed to us just as truly as they [the Israelites of old did when the good news of deliverance from bondage came to them]; but the message they heard did not benefit them, because it was not mixed with faith** (with the leaning of the entire personality on God in absolute trust and confidence in His power, wisdom, and goodness) by those who heard it; neither were they united in faith with the ones [Joshua and Caleb] who heard (did believe).”

Hebrews 3:19 “**So we see that they were not able to enter [into His rest], because of their unwillingness to adhere to and trust in and rely on God [unbelief had shut them out].**”

- Doubt.
- Fear – this is the antidote for faith and gives satan power!

REMEMBER: Do not be deceived by your feelings – it is all about FAITH!

Counter-attack:

- Our faith in God always has to be around us like a protection (a wall).
- Faith is a shield that protects us from head to toe.
- Faith ensures active resistance against the enemy (1 Peter 5:9).
- Faith is released by our mouths – as you speak the attacks decrease.
- When you sense the anointing on you, it is when God Almighty is reaching out to you and putting His Hand on you!

5. The Salvation of God – our Helmet.



The helmet was very elaborate and bright! It covered the jaw and the cheek bones. Many times it was made out of horse-hair – very noticeable! When you are saved, you should be very noticeable to the world because you are different! Our helmet is much more than just going to heaven. It also includes your deliverance, healing, prosperity, abundant life – FULLNESS in God.

One of the greatest strategies of the enemy is to attack our minds. Without our helmet on, the enemy has free entry to our minds. Always ensure that your mind has peace with God, man, and yourself. Do not try to solve all problems with your mind. You can notice an attack against your mind when you try to read any book, and you have no problem in reading. But try and read the Bible – BIG problem! You fall asleep in church!

Attack of satan:

- The mind – a war zone for thoughts!

*2 Corinthians 10:5 “5 [Inasmuch as we] refute arguments and theories and reasonings and every proud and lofty thing that sets itself up against the [true] knowledge of God; **and we lead every thought and purpose away captive into the obedience of Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One),”***

- The unrenewed mind remains in darkness – we must renew our minds!

*Ephesians 4:18 “18 Their moral understanding is darkened and their reasoning is beclouded. [They are] alienated (estranged, self-banished) from the life of God [with no share in it; this is] **because of the ignorance** (the want of knowledge and perception, the willful blindness) that is deep-seated in them, due to their hardness of heart [to the insensitiveness of their moral nature].”*

- The carnal mind operates in the flesh.

*Romans 8:6 “6 **Now the mind of the flesh** [which is sense and reason without the Holy Spirit] is **death** [death that comprises all the miseries arising from sin, both here and hereafter]. But the mind of the [Holy] **Spirit is life** and [soul] **peace** [both now and forever].”*

*Matthew 13:22 “22 As for what was sown among thorns, this is he who hears the Word, but the cares of the world and the pleasure and delight and glamour and deceitfulness of riches **choke and suffocate the Word, and it yields no fruit.**”*

The cares of this world binds us – and chokes out the Word. Worry is like a treadmill ... thoughts go round and round in your mind.

Imagination is another source of deception. For example, rejection. When you walk into a room and everyone stops talking ... what do you think? This ties into the stronghold of fear. There is a good definition of the word FEAR – “**F**alse **E**vidence **A**ppearing **R**eal”.

Counter-attack:

- Take thoughts captive to obedience – do not allow your thoughts to run wild.
- Be renewed in the spirit of your mind (Ephesians 4:23).
- Bondages of sects and the occult over your mind must be broken.
 - For example, sexual bondages, lust, foul language, swearing/cursing, and so forth. If you were involved in the occult before your conversion, you will have difficulty in controlling your thoughts.

*Romans 8:6 “6 **Now the mind of the flesh** [which is sense and reason without the Holy Spirit] is **death** [death that comprises all the miseries arising from sin, both here and hereafter]. But the mind of the [Holy] Spirit is life and [soul] peace [both now and forever].”*

*Philippians 4:8 “8 For the rest, brethren, **whatever is true, whatever is worthy of reverence and is honorable and seemly, whatever is just, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely and lovable, whatever is kind and winsome and gracious, if there is any virtue and excellence, if there is anything worthy of praise, think on and weigh and take account of these things [fix your minds on them].”***



6. **The Word of God – our Sword.**

The whole of creation is created by God's Spoken Word. When satan came to tempt Y'shua [Jesus], Y'shua [Jesus] defeated satan by the Word of God – "it is written". The Word is "two-edged". It was first spoken out of God's Mouth, now it is spoken out of your mouth. The Rhema Word is tied to my BELT – the Sword hangs on my belt. The Holy Spirit will draw from within you the Word that you have been faithfully putting into your spirit during your daily LOGOS Bible studies. The Rhema word is a specific word for a specific situation for a specific purpose!



The Sword of the Spirit is a Living Sword [Rhema word] with Godly Power to cast down strongholds. It is an offensive weapon that comes out of the mouth (not only thoughts). We encourage you to meditate [and memorize] on Scriptures where you are weak.

Attack of satan:

- From the very beginning, satan casts doubt on God's Word – "has God said?". You must KNOW the Word to be able to stand!
- From the beginning too, satan twists, abuses, and misinterprets the Word of God.
- Satan steals the Word from the heart of people who hear.
 - That is why it is so important to always SEAL the Word with the Blood of the Lamb!

Matthew 13:19 “19 While anyone is hearing the Word of the kingdom and does not grasp and comprehend it, **the evil one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is what was sown along the roadside.**”

- Teachings of demons.

1 Timothy 4:1 “**BUT THE [Holy] Spirit distinctly and expressly declares that in latter times some will turn away from the faith, giving attention to deluding and seducing spirits and doctrines that demons teach,**”

Counter-attack:

NOTE! Do not repeat the Word like a parrot – you must have FAITH [believing in your heart] in the Word.



- Do not be afraid to rebuke satan.
- Declare the territory (God’s Word) on which you stand (boundaries).
- Speak the Truth with authority and faith.

For example ... Joshua had his mind girded with the truth of the LAND over which they were fighting – God had given them the land. Joshua knew about God’s Promise to Moses that He will destroy the giants. He was therefore not intimidated – he knew the Word!

7. Praying in the Spirit – our Lance.

This is like a javelin or spear in the spirit. You need the Spirit-language to be able to pray effectively!

Ephesians 6:18 “18 **Pray at all times** (on every occasion, in every season) **in the Spirit**, with all [manner of] prayer and entreaty. To that end **keep alert** and **watch** with strong purpose and perseverance, interceding in behalf of all the saints (God’s consecrated people).”

Jude 1:20 “20 But you, beloved, **build yourselves up** [founded] on your most holy faith [make progress, rise like an edifice higher and higher], **praying in the Holy Spirit;**”

Types of prayer ...

- Prayer of consecration ... Face-to-face prayer.
- Prayer of petition ... Urgent need.
- Prayer of authority.
- Thanksgiving ... Gratefulness.
- Supplication ... Worship Him!
- Intercession ... You don't know what to pray, the Holy Spirit prays!

8. The Zeal of the LORD – our Cloak.

The zeal of the LORD is often a missed item of our armour:

*Isaiah 59:17 “17 For [the Lord] put on righteousness as a breastplate or coat of mail, and salvation as a helmet upon His head; He put on garments of vengeance for clothing and **was clad with zeal [and furious divine jealousy] as a cloak.**”*

The zeal of the LORD protects you like a mantle – it protects against discouragement.

Rearguard ... what about your back?

Declare the Glory of the LORD!

*Isaiah 66:19 “19 And I will set up a [miraculous] sign among them, and from them I will send survivors to the nations—to Tarshish, Pul (Put), and Lud, who draw the bow, to Tubal and Javan, to the isles and coastlands afar off that have not heard of My fame nor seen My glory. **And they will declare and proclaim My glory among the nations.**”*

*Psalms 96:8 “8 **Give to the Lord the glory due His name; bring an offering and come [before Him] into His courts.**”*

- People must cover your back with prayer while you fight and rebuild the fallen wall.

*Nehemiah 4:16-17 “16 And from that time forth, half of my servants worked at the task, and the other **half held the spears, shields, bows, and coats of mail**; and the leaders stood behind all the house of Judah.”*

Conclusion:

Stand on all seven points. Come to the conviction that the armor will triumph at all times in spite of any environment and in contrast to any circumstance. Put on your armor – and fight in the strength of the LORD! This is the only way to possess the land ... otherwise you will forever be a wounded soldier.

Part 5:
The battle of
the mind

The battleground of the mind²³ – section one:

The mind is the primary battleground in our warfare against the kingdom of darkness. To gain victory over one's thoughts and mind is just about the war won!

The mind is a great area of warfare. Until every thought is taken captive unto the obedience of Messiah, there can be no peace.

“The devil hates light and truth, because it removes the territory in which he works. Every word of truth needs to be fought over in the mind of the believer.”²⁴

Did you know ... it is possible for a child of God to have a new life and a new heart ... BUT not a new head!



Mark 12: 30 “30 And **you shall love the Lord your God** out of and with your whole heart and out of and with all your soul (your life) and out of and **with all your mind (with your faculty of thought and your moral understanding)** and out of and with all your strength. This is the first and principal commandment.”

The mind:

- Most important place of victory.
- Programmed from family relationships, books, experiences, knowledge, and so forth.
- What you think influences all relationships with people and God.
- If you believe lies, satan has deceived you.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5 “3 For though we walk (live) in the flesh, we are not carrying on our warfare according to the flesh and using mere human weapons. **4 For the weapons of our warfare are not physical [weapons of flesh and blood], but they are mighty before God for the overthrow and destruction of strongholds,** 5 [Inasmuch as we] refute arguments and theories and reasonings and every proud and lofty thing that sets itself up against the [true] knowledge of God; and **we lead every thought and purpose away captive into the obedience of Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One),”**

²³ For additional study, please see our book “*HOWH: How To Walk In Victory*”, available from the website or for order from the office.

²⁴ Quote by Watchman Nee

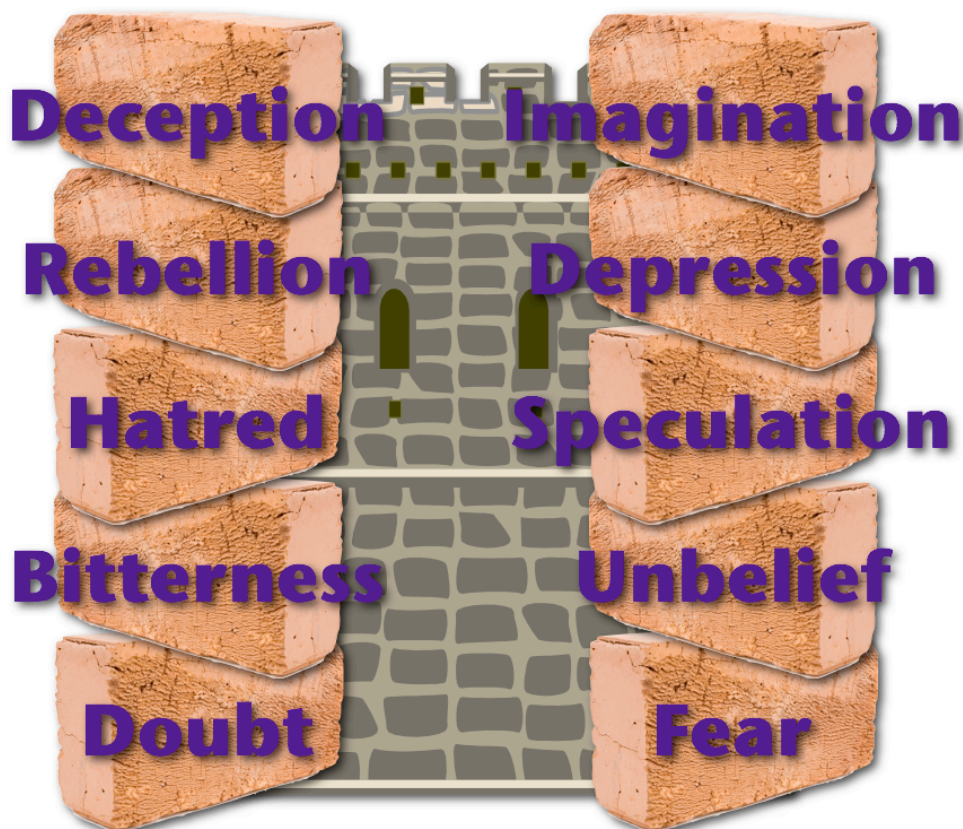
There are several different attacks of the enemy against the mind. To counter these, we need to use the specific parts of armour. Most attacks will stem from strongholds [darkness, lies, deception] of thinking patterns we have formed in our minds. It is these that must be cast down.

A stronghold [something like an ancient castle] refers to a city with very thick walls that need to be captured. Ancient armies would try and shoot fiery arrows into the city over the walls and hope to set the city alight inside. Another strategy was to take a battering ram and start to batter against a piece of the wall and continue until you weaken the wall and there comes a breakthrough.

In the stronghold, you would have all your supplies and backups what you would need to continue to fight and maintain the battle. The stronghold is therefore VERY important! It would keep the people fighting the battle safe and it would keep the enemy outside.

Paul is warning us that this is the type of warfare we will have to do against the strongholds in our minds! This won't just be a quick prayer and now its over and done with! It is a process and constant warfare – sometimes it can take quite some time before you will really experience a breakthrough.

For example, after being raped and/or sexually abused, you will have built up very high walls of no trust, fear, anger, hatred, isolation, rejection, self-hatred, and so forth. All of these emotions are bricks building this HIGH wall around you. You think you are safe inside your stronghold – but you are also very lonely and others are not allowed inside. It is very difficult for you to trust and allow people from the Body to love you and take care of you!



Our carnal minds argue and reason against the things of God. TRUTH: “God loves you, He really cares for you!” LIE: “Yeah sure! Where was He all the time when things were going so bad for me as a child?! If He really cared, why didn’t He show up?!”

Wrong teachings will also block you from receiving the TRUTH of the Word. The Word comes through your ears to your mind. If you have a stronghold in the mind, it will block the truth from reaching your spirit.

There are two basic types of strongholds:

- Logical arguments want to rise up above the knowledge and truth of God. Our thoughts – such as “science”, evolution, philosophy, and so forth – want to stand up against the TRUTH of God’s Word.
- Illogical reasonings are fears – fear must be cast out by God’s Perfect Love and Truth.

We must learn to take every thought captive!



In this section, we will be answering the questions:

- How does the war against our mind take place?
- What is a normal mind – where does the enemy bind us?

We will learn that we have to walk, talk, and think like a “saved” man – this is the JOURNEY of mind renewal²⁵.

²⁵ For additional study, we recommend Joyce Meyer’s books on how to renew your mind.

The human mind:

- The mind has a connection with the spiritual. Demonic communication with man takes place through the mind. Enemy has free access to our minds. Eve was attacked in her mind through doubt and deception.

*John 13:2 “2 So [it was] during supper, Satan having already put the **thought** of betraying Jesus in the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon’s son,”*

- The mind is the battleground because it is the focal point of demonic attacks. It is vulnerable to oppression.
- The mind is a receiver – you must select what you see and hear.
- The two main ways of communication to your mind are through the eyes and ears. This is why it is so important to guard what we watch and hear! TV²⁶, movies, DVD’s, entertainment – and particularly mind-altering substances²⁷ such as drugs and medications – can influence us and open our minds up to the enemy.
- There has been a continuous warfare over who would control the thought processes of man’s mind since God first spoke to Adam and Eve.
- Until you have victory in your mind, you will experience no victory in your spiritual walk. The mind must be brought under control of the Spirit. Do not be motivated to clean up your lives because of FEAR! This will make you tired. You must be motivated out of LOVE! When you have received a revelation of the Father’s LOVE for you, you can’t but love Him back! You want to please Him! So you obey Him!

WARNING! When you are tired, your resistance is very low! Be very careful of the TV when you are tired! If your mind is unprotected, the enemy will “ride Kyalami” through your mind!

Penetration of the mind:

Demons are intelligent beings that are able to make contact with you at the level of your mind. Their thoughts are fed into your mind and are considered to be “natural” – you may find it difficult to determine/discern where your thoughts come from. However, there are only three possible sources of thoughts:

- The enemy:
 - Thoughts of suicide, evil/negative thoughts, depression/oppression thoughts, “out of the blue” thoughts, and so forth. Satan throws “thoughts” at you and sees if he can “bait” you! Will you agree with him?

²⁶ For additional study, please see our book “Gateways Of Influence”, available from the website or for order from the office.

²⁷ For additional study, we recommend the documentary “Making A Killing”. For more information, check out <http://www.cchr.org/>.

- Disunity: Jealousy and competition results when we listen to the suggestions of satan.
- Yourself:
 - These thoughts could vary, depending on the degree of mind renewal.
- God:
 - These thoughts will ALWAYS be in line with God's Word.

Who is speaking to you?

The pattern of strife and disunity in the Body:

*James 3:16 "16 For wherever there is **jealousy** (envy) and contention (rivalry and selfish ambition), there will also be **confusion** (unrest, disharmony, rebellion) and **all sorts of evil and vile practices.**"*

- Envy and Jealousy: A fierce desire to promote your own ideas and convictions to the exclusion of everyone else.
- Party spirit: strife – no longer can you function as a whole.



The Word teaches us to mark a divisive man or woman – they will cause disunity and factions with gossip and slander. They gather a group around them to believe what they say. They use betrayal with leaders and stick knives into one another's backs! If our minds are unrenewed, this is what we are open for – the enemy will be able to use us to bring division in the church.

Check your track record ...

If you have left a church and/or ministry out of anger or rebellion, and so forth, then please go back to those leaders and get them to release you with a blessing ... otherwise you will be running from church to church, group to group.

Maybe you have left a church because you felt your season at that church is over and God is leading you on to move to another church – that is fine – just be released to go with a blessing! Seek PEACE! Tie your shoes of Peace TIGHTLY!

Characteristics of a divisive person is someone who begins to gather people around himself to see his point of view ignoring and bypassing pastoral authority. In this party-spirit group we now have CONFUSION! Prophecies flow but most is false as they are under the control of the spirit of rebellion and deception. Evil and vile practices – terribly bad, exceedingly vile – are performed.

QUESTION: Are we renewed in our minds?

The renewing of our minds means we submit one unto another and that we are under Godly leadership – not to be controlled – but to seek God together on whatever direction you need to take.

*Proverbs 14:30 “30 **A calm and undisturbed mind and heart are the life and health of the body, but envy, jealousy, and wrath are like rottenness of the bones.**”*

Many people are sick because there is envy and jealousy in their lives, wrath, anger, bitterness, and so forth. They are suffering from arthritis, stiffness, and bone diseases. Jealousy and envy causes rottenness to the bones. What brings me health? A calm and undisturbed mind and heart. Our minds must be renewed to what God says!

A word on JEALOUSY.

Jealousy is so powerful – it can kill and destroy. Christians can also be jealous of one another and this can be just as dangerous as if this Christian goes to a witch-doctor to curse his brother or sister, family or tribe. We need to study exactly what jealousy is all about so that we can protect ourselves from being the target of jealousy.

The spirit of jealousy seems to be able to partner very effectively with other demons. There are certain demonic entities that come in pairs or triplets. If we deal with only one part of the unholy alliance, the problem seems to reoccur. For example, on a simplistic level, if you deal with a critical and judgmental spirit, there would be significant success in the deliverance, but after a period of time, the problem would come back.

What you need to understand is that you also have to deal with the perfectionism in that individual. Frequently an individual that is outwardly judgmental of others is inwardly judgmental of himself (that is the perfectionism). It is two sides of the same point of criticism and you have to deal with both sides. Similarly, there are five primary demonic strongholds that seem to partner with, or establish an unholy alliance with jealousy. Those alliances need to be dealt with.

- ➡ First of all, there is a spirit of death and infirmity. If that is a generational problem in the family line and the spirit of jealousy is also attacking the individual, it is a dangerous mix.
- ➡ We also see jealousy frequently attaching to somebody who already has a victim spirit.
- ➡ A third demonic stronghold is Freemasonry.
- ➡ A fourth one is any kind of financial curse.
- ➡ The fifth one is mental confusion or even mental illness in a family line.
- ➡ When someone has an inability to perceive true reality or is living in denial, it suggests the possibility of a spirit of mental confusion or mental illness in the family line.

Any one of these five by itself is a nuisance. Each one of them seems to be a magnet attracting a spirit of jealousy from other people, with the two demonic powers forming an unholy alliance. When doing the family survey, try to identify whether any of these five is present, and if so, call them to attention and sever the alliance between them and the spirit of jealousy before taking them on individually.

Covenants that provide protection for demons.

It is important to understand covenants of protection.

Isaiah 28:14-15 *“Therefore hear the word of the Lord, you scoffers who rule this people in Jerusalem. You boast, ‘**We have entered into a covenant with death, with the grave we have made an agreement.** When an overwhelming scourge sweeps by, it cannot touch us, for we have made a lie our refuge and falsehood our hiding place.’”*

This is not just empty boasting. There are in fact, covenants that provide protection for demons. If you are trying to evict a demonic intruder who is resistant, it may be that there is a covenant providing protection for that evil spirit. If there is an unholy alliance between jealousy and death, the victim spirit, or Freemasonry, a lot of time could be spent commanding, rejecting and renouncing, without result because their unholy alliances do indeed afford the demons some level of protection.

A verse in Isaiah gives us the solution to this problem.

*Isaiah 28:16-18 "So this is what the Sovereign Lord says: 'See, I lay in Zion, a tested stone, a precious cornerstone for a sure foundation; the one who trusts will never be dismayed. I will make justice the measuring line and righteousness the plumb line; hail will sweep away your refuge, the lie, and water will overflow your hiding place. **Your covenant with death will be annulled; your agreement with the grave will not stand. When the overwhelming scourge sweeps by, you will be beaten down by it.**'"*



A covenant that was voluntarily entered into by two parties is allowed to stand, regardless of the pain it causes one party or the other, unless there is a law that supersedes it. For example, from time to time we read of individuals who were brought from other countries to South Africa under some form of agreement that amounts to slavery. The fact that they voluntarily entered into a binding agreement is immaterial.

The fact that they promised to exchange a certain amount of labour in return for passage to South Africa is immaterial. The covenant they made with the businessman is instantly annulled when immigration officials find out about it, since the law of this land supersedes whatever agreements they entered into for slavery. Similarly, there are ancient generational covenants that were made voluntarily at some point, and they provide a measure of protection for the demons in an individual's life.

However, those covenants are subject to the higher law of the universe. Any individual can appeal to the Righteous Judge of the Universe on the basis of those covenants not being just or righteous according to the supreme law that God has established. Then, if God agrees that those covenants stand in violation of His law, He declares them annulled. That removes the protection the demons once had.

Once the unholy alliances and the covenants of protection have been annulled by God, we proclaim that the individual has voluntarily entered into a Blood Covenant relationship with Y'shua [Jesus].

We proclaim that this Covenant transcends and supersedes every other covenant, agreement, or protection. We command each of the different demonic heads to stand alone at attention with those under them, not in communication with each other and not helping each other. At the same time we may find it necessary to block any demonic reinforcement coming from the land or the building.

Once all the preparatory work is done, we come to the heart of the matter and that is severing the agreements with the devil. We proclaim the truth that this individual has a legal right to receive everything God has given him.

We may list life, health, beauty, mental acuity, skills, talents, spiritual gifts, family, wealth, ministry, open doors or whatever the focus of the jealousy has been. We ask God to open the books and to identify every individual who has thought, spoken or written untrue words about the things God has given us.

We then ask God to sever every agreement that was entered into between any two people or any groups of individuals and to only allow to stand those things that are true. Then we ask God to sever the agreements between human beings and the demonic realm where those agreements empowered the spirit of jealousy, directly or indirectly.

As simple as that sounds, the act of verbally severing known and unknown agreements has liberated hundreds of people from the power of satan's toxic emotions. Satan is always jealous of what we have that he will no longer have, yet he cannot arbitrarily attack us with jealousy. He needs someone else to come into agreement with his devaluation of us. We cannot change his toxicity, but we can stop the flow by asking God to judge the thoughts and words of other people, and to sever every agreement with a lie.

It works!

Petition for jealousy, envy, and strife ...

Father, in the Name of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] of Nazareth, we bring every ancient generational covenant and any other covenant agreement that was made on my behalf, or done knowingly or unknowingly by me, before You now.

We acknowledge that they were made voluntarily at some point and in so doing provided a measure of protection for the demons in my personal life. We want to declare that everyone of those covenants are subject to the higher Law of the universe.

We now appeal to the Righteous Judge of the Universe on the basis of those covenants not being JUST or RIGHTEOUS according to the Supreme Law that God has established.

We petition You, Father, to hear our cry that those covenants stand in direct violation of Your Law, and that You will declare them annulled. We thank You Father, for now removing the protection the demons once had!!

We declare the unholy alliances and the covenants of protection for the demons have now been annulled by God, Creator of the Universe!!

We proclaim that we have, as individuals, voluntarily entered into a Blood Covenant relationship with Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ]. We proclaim that this Covenant transcends and supersedes every other covenant, agreement, or protection.

We command each of the different demonic heads to stand alone and at attention with those that are assigned under you. You are not allowed to communicate with each other and you are not allowed to help each other, in the Name of Y'shua [Jesus]! We separate you one from another in the Name of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ]!

We now also block any demonic reinforcement coming from the land or the building we are in, in the Name of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus]! We cut off all communication lines with the demons present in this deliverance situation with the strongman and his demons operating over the city/area/locality, in the Name of Y'shua [Jesus]!

We speak to any external strongman: "In the Name of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ], you will not send any reinforcements to help the demons here in this place that we are trying to evict!!"

In the Name of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ], we proclaim the truth that we have a legal right to receive everything God has given us namely:

- ✓ Life, Health, Beauty, Mental Sharpness,
- ✓ Skills, Talents, Spiritual Gifts,
- ✓ Family, Wealth, Fame, Ministry,
- ✓ Open Doors, Joy, Peace, A Future,
- ✓ Destiny and Sonship in Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] of Nazareth.

We ask You God to open the Books and to identify every individual who has thought, spoken, or written untrue words about the things God has given us. We now ask You, Father, to severe every agreement that was entered into between any two people or any groups of individuals and to only allow to stand those things that are true.

We now also ask You Father, to severe the agreements between human beings and the demonic realm where those agreements empowered the spirit of jealousy, directly or indirectly and which resulted in curses upon our lives – namely to steal, kill and destroy.

Father, we petition that You will now judge the thoughts and words of any agent of satan or child of God that has come to falsely accuse us before You, Almighty God, satan and men – Lord, severe every agreement of lying accusation against us, in the Name of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus]!

We ask You to break every curse in the Name of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ], reverse the curses and turn them into blessings! Thank You, Father, for Your Faithfulness!

Thank You Y'shua [Jesus] for the price You paid by taking on all the forces of darkness and OVERCOMING THEM FOR US!

Thank You Holy Spirit, for leading us every step of the way to appropriate what Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] has done for us, and to be the seal on our lives that we are more than conquerors through Y'shua [Jesus] the Messiah, Who always leads us into triumph over our enemies!

AMEN!



Three character traits of the evil spirits:²⁸

- Their thoughts always enter from the outside, mainly through the mind;
- Their thoughts force and oppress man to take action immediately;
- Their thoughts confuse and paralyze man's mind so that he cannot think clearly any longer.



Areas from where the mind is penetrated:

- It is such a tragedy that we can be saved for many years but never grow – we do not experience victory in our lives!
- We need to renew our minds and grow up in the glory of the Lord – into His Image – year after year! This is the JOURNEY!

James 1:22-25 "22 But be doers of the Word [obey the message], and not merely listeners to it, betraying yourselves [into deception by reasoning contrary to the Truth]. 23 For if anyone only listens to the Word without obeying it and being a doer of it, he is like a man who looks carefully at his [own] natural face in a mirror; 24 For he thoughtfully observes himself, and then goes off and promptly forgets what he was like. 25 But he who looks carefully into the faultless law, the [law] of liberty, and is faithful to it and perseveres in looking into it, being not a heedless listener who forgets but an active doer [who obeys], he shall be blessed in his doing (his life of obedience)."

²⁸ Quote by Watchman Nee

The unrenewed mind:

- Our mind is not automatically renewed at rebirth. In unrenewed areas we are open to deception – to the extent to which Light and Truth enter us, to such an extent are we free from deception.
- Repentance at conversion is the beginning of a renewed mind, it is a change in thought about God (Mark 1:15; James 4:8-10).



Romans 12:2 “2 Do not be conformed to this world (this age), [fashioned after and adapted to its external, superficial customs], but be transformed (changed) by the [entire] renewal of your mind [by its new ideals and its new attitude], so that you may prove [for yourselves] what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God, even the thing which is good and acceptable and perfect [in His sight for you].”

Renewing the mind is the same word as being transformed. The word used in describing the transformation of Y'shua [Jesus] on the Mount of Transfiguration is the same word used here in Romans 12:2. We need to be transformed from the natural to the supernatural.

We have had wrong thinking patterns for years about people, God, and so forth ... And ourselves. When we come to Messiah, we need to be renewed to think as God thinks – according to the TRUTH! This is one of the reasons we must meditate and study God's Word. This process of mind renewal takes TIME with God to know HOW He thinks. Relationships take time – it is not instant!

Areas of penetration are where the enemy has built up strongholds in the mind.

These can be developed through:

- Speculation, (horoscope, news, weather, economy).
- Imagination – building my own stronghold where I feel safe! I will need to destroy that stronghold [my idol] that I built in the spirit and choose to run into the Name of the LORD, which is now my STRONG TOWER!
- Fantasy, day-dreaming, sexual fantasies, pornography, and so forth.
- Fears, unbelief, doubt.
- Dirty, immoral or perverse thoughts – bondage of the flesh.
- Wrong thoughts are instruments of satan to bind and defeat us.

When our minds are unrenewed, we cannot even make the Promises of God our own. We need to pray daily and ask God to show us the areas of our minds that are still unrenewed. Maybe you have even gone for deliverance and felt freedom for a while, but then it all came back again and you do not understand WHY? You have not dealt with the strongholds of the mind, and renewed your mind.

An unrenewed mind is:

- Darkened (blinded, shortage of light).

*2 Corinthians 4:4 “4 For the god of this world has **blinded the unbelievers’ minds** [that they should not discern the truth], preventing them from seeing the illuminating **light of the Gospel of the glory of Christ (the Messiah), Who is the Image and Likeness of God.**”*

- Hardened heart.

*2 Corinthians 3:14 “14 In fact, their **minds** were grown **hard** and **calloused** [they had become dull and had lost the power of understanding]; for until this present day, when the Old Testament (the old covenant) is being read, that same veil still lies [on their hearts], not being lifted [to reveal] that in Christ it is made void and done away.”*

- Compromising (open to temptations and thoughts of the enemy – you enjoy sin – “It’s not that bad!”).

*Ephesians 2:3 “3 Among these we as well as **you once lived and conducted ourselves in the passions of our flesh [our behavior governed by our corrupt and sensual nature]**, obeying the impulses of the flesh and the **thoughts** of the mind [our cravings dictated by our senses and our dark imaginings]. We were then by nature children of [God’s] wrath and heirs of [His] indignation, like the rest of mankind.”*

- Hostile – resists the Truth.

*Colossians 1:21 “21 And although you at one time were estranged and alienated from Him and **were of hostile attitude of mind in your wicked activities,**”*

- Full of lies and deceit – such as evolution.

*2 Corinthians 11:3 “3 But [now] I am fearful, lest that even as the serpent beguiled Eve by his cunning, so your **minds may be corrupted and seduced from wholehearted and sincere and pure devotion to Christ. [Gen. 3:4.]”***

- Worldly/carnal.

*Romans 8:7 “7 [That is] because the **mind** of the **flesh** [with its carnal thoughts and purposes] is **hostile** to God, for it does not **submit** itself to **God’s Law**; indeed it cannot.”*

*Luke 8:12 “12 Those along the traveled road are the people who have heard; then the devil comes and carries away the message out of their hearts, that they may **not believe** (acknowledge Me as their Savior and devote themselves to Me) and be saved [here and hereafter].”*

- Bondages over the mind especially are found in people who have, before their salvation, been involved in:
 - The occult – psychic influence, third eye opening, spirit of divination, psychic gifts, and so forth.
 - Sects, false religions, Transcendental Meditation, lying spirits, mind-over-matter, and so forth.
 - Hypnosis [mass hypnosis] – an example of the fruit is falling asleep in church; a passive mind not interested in the things of the LORD.
 - Pornography (unclean spirits – dirty thoughts).
 - Drugs, pop music, hypnotic beats – witchcraft, sorcery, and drugs come from the same root word, “pharmakia”.
 - Mind control and mind development techniques – sales techniques use manipulation, intimidation, domination to sales their goods.
 - **SHOCK!** If you have had a traumatic experience, an accident, attack, death of loved one, and so forth, your mind goes into a state of shock which has the same effect on the brain as a curse. You need to have the shock broken over you even if it happened years ago – your body cells store the traumatic memories and this can result in sicknesses and disease years later – cancer, diabetes, epilepsy, and so forth for example. The fruit of shock can also be forgetfulness.



There are some well-known business leaders who teach on “Mind Over Matter” and “How To Win Friends And Influence People”. They use the Bible and teach you to use psychic abilities in business. These leaders have been known to be on the highest level of Freemasonry.

Deception – rejecting the TRUTH!

2 Corinthians 11:3 “3 But [now] I am fearful, lest that even as the serpent beguiled Eve by his cunning, so your **minds** may be **corrupted** and **seduced** from wholehearted and sincere and pure devotion to Christ.”

Often it is sincere Christians that are deceived. Note, deception is based on ignorance and not on moral character. Deception has to do with the mind and it means that a wrong thought has been allowed by the mind in the misconception that it is the truth (it appears to be the truth).

How can you make sure you will not be deceived?

2 Thessalonians 2:10-12 “10 And by unlimited seduction to evil and with all wicked deception for those who are perishing (going to perdition) **because they did not welcome the Truth but refused to love it that they might be saved.** 11 Therefore God sends upon them a misleading influence, a working of error and a strong delusion to make them believe what is false, 12 In order that all may be judged and condemned who did not believe in [who refused to adhere to, trust in, and rely on] the Truth, but [instead] took pleasure in unrighteousness.”

You must love the TRUTH!

“A great need for all believers is that they should earnestly seek after all truth for their progressive deliverance from all the lies of satan; only knowledge and truth can give victory over the lies of satan, who is a deceiver and a liar ... Deliverance from lies is to believe in the Truth. Nothing else can remove a lie except the truth.”²⁹

You cannot just drive out a lying spirit because they believe the lie. For example:

- An alcoholic must acknowledge he is an alcoholic and the truth will set him free.
- A spiritualist believes there are good spirits and bad spirits – he believes his spirits are “good” spirits until the truth is shown.

Proverbs 9:10 “10 The **reverent and worshipful fear** of the Lord is the beginning (the chief and choice part) of **Wisdom**, and the knowledge of the Holy One is insight and **understanding.**”

²⁹ Quote by Jessie Penn-Lewis

The Fear of the LORD is to hate sin as God hates it. True deliverance is to hate what binds you. You will be able to freely testify if you've been set free.

Christians can be deceived by:

- **Deception through pride:**

- Pride cases blind spots so that you cannot see yourself and others in perspective (spinach in my teeth!). When you exalt yourself above others – this is self-deception. For example, a liar must acknowledge he tells lies. Another example is where you judge and criticize others – when a sinner comes into the church and does not smell so good – we pull up our noses and show the attitude of the “elder brother”. The Father's House is for ALL sinners!
- You become susceptible to deceiving spirits that flatter your ego. For example, William Branham (he was used mightily in performing miracles – later on in his life he believed he was Elijah that had come back to earth). Be careful of personal prophecy that elevates you. Be careful of believing you have a “special ministry and/or a special power anointing” that no-one else has. Be careful of people lifting you up and putting you on a pedestal – that makes you an open target for the enemy. This can also open you up for a familiar spirit giving you prophetic words and you think it is God.



Ezekiel 13:6 “6 They have seen falsehood and lying divination, saying, The Lord says; but the Lord has not sent them. Yet they have hoped and made men to hope for the confirmation of their word.”

*Jeremiah 23:16 “16 Thus says the Lord of hosts: **Do not listen to the words of the [false] prophets who prophesy to you.** They teach you vanity (emptiness, falsity, and futility) and fill you with vain hopes; they speak a vision of their own **minds** and not from the mouth of the Lord.”*

- Don't base your future on prophecies. All prophecies must be tested and the prophets must exalt Y'shua [Jesus] only.
- Be careful of automatic handwriting "thoughts" from God – "contemplative prayer". This is when you empty your mind and wait for thoughts from outside. Examples of these types of books include "Aquarian Gospel of Jesus Christ" and "God Calling". Please note, this is NOT Godly journaling or dialogue with God!
 - You could also be doing automatic drawings – where you draw your "guardian angel" which is actually a spirit guide, or you draw the spirits over a mountain and/or river, and so forth.
- Be careful if you resist warning and correction. You must stay teachable. Even baby Christians can correct you. REMEMBER the word must be given in LOVE!
- Be careful if you think that you have received a special revelation or think that you are the prophetic voice of the Church.
 - An example is this is of David Burke. In the 1960's, we had the Hippie Movement and he started a "church" called "Children of God". They believed they could win people for Jesus with sex! They called their outreach groups "The Flirty Fishers" and "Hookers for Christ". They stated that marriage was selfish!
 - Group intercessors must be careful not to see themselves as an "exclusive group". If you study of the cults you will see that every single one of them believed that they and they alone have the truth! The "righteousness message" believes that the whole church is compromising except them – this undermines the Body of Messiah. Every new revelation you receive must be checked and tested by mature leaders that you trust!

*Romans 16:17 "17 I appeal to you, brethren, to **be on your guard concerning those who create dissensions and difficulties and cause divisions, in opposition to the doctrine (the teaching) which you have been taught. [I warn you to turn aside from them, to] avoid them.**"*

• **Deception through bitterness³⁰:**

- Satan works in darkness. You walk in darkness if you are bitter.

*1 John 2:9-11 "9 Whoever says he is in the Light and [yet] hates his brother [Christian, born-again child of God his Father] is in darkness even until now. 10 Whoever loves his brother [believer] abides (lives) in the Light, and in It or in him there is no occasion for stumbling or cause for error or sin. 11 But he who hates (detests, despises) his brother [in Christ] is in darkness and walking (living) in the dark; **he is straying and does not perceive or know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes.**"*

- Suspicion – if people have hurt you, you react out of distrust and suspicion.

³⁰ Satan tries this attack daily!

- Hurts – for example, hurts in marriage can cause you to reject the marriage truth of submission.
- **Deception through passivity:**
 - There is a world of difference between meditation [studying of and filling your mind with] God's Word versus Eastern meditation [emptying your mind, waiting for thoughts from the outside, contemplative prayer].
 - When you do not understand how God speaks to you. God speaks to your spirit not your mind. It can be spontaneous thoughts that come to mind. For example, "go and pray for that person in the Pick 'n Pay (Pick 'n Pray)!" Be prepared to make a mistake!
 - A mind that is hardened, closed and rigid generates a rigid, fanatical spirit. A fanatical spirit is a clear sign of deception.



*James 3:15-17 "15 This [superficial] wisdom is not such as comes down from above, but is earthly, unspiritual (animal), even devilish (demoniacal). 16 For wherever there is **jealousy** (envy) and contention (rivalry and selfish ambition), there will also be **confusion** (unrest, disharmony, rebellion) and **all sorts of evil and vile practices**. 17 But the wisdom from above is first of all **pure** (undefiled); then it is **peace-loving, courteous (considerate, gentle)**. [It is willing to] **yield to reason, full of compassion and good fruits**; it is wholehearted and straightforward, impartial and unfeigned (free from doubts, wavering, and insincerity)."*

"A fanatical spirit, coming from the enemy, is filled with zeal and energy, but the character of such people is closed to reason, dogmatic, hard and extremely self-confident. These people are unwilling to listen to others, because they say that they hear the voice of God."³¹

³¹ Quote by Michael Harper

- A mind that is hardened, closed and rigid generates a rigid, fanatical spirit. A fanatical spirit is a clear sign of deception.
- Revelation or direction coming from a passive mind is open to deception.
- Some people are deceived because they think they are so spiritual that all their thoughts come from God. For example, a nun believes that suffering will make her more holy. She had an older nun as a mentor who had crooked legs and walked with much difficulty. So she prayed for her legs to become more crooked than an older nun's legs so that she could become as holy as she is! There is so much attention given to the cross and suffering that we forget Messiah is ALIVE! The truth about suffering is that suffering comes as a result of preaching the Gospel. Holiness does not mean being poor! We encourage you to check if your forefathers made an oath of poverty – you need to renounce that and break the curse!
- Misunderstandings of the truth bring deception.
- A truth that is not in balance with other truths, becomes a false doctrine/ heresy.
- Can be misled concerning God and His Character as King and Father.
- ***Deception through disobedience and misinterpretation of Scripture:***
 - Being a hearer and not a doer of the Word (James 1:22).
 - Saying you are without sin (1 John 1:8).
 - Thinking you are “something” (Galatians 6:3).
 - Thinking yourself wise with the wisdom of this world (1 Corinthians 3:18).
 - Pretending to be religious, but actually have an uncontrolled tongue, revealing your real condition (James 1:26).
 - Thinking that the unrighteous will inherit the Kingdom of God (1 Corinthians 6:9).
 - Thinking that what you sow, you will not reap (Galatians 6:7).
 - Thinking that contact with sin will have no effect on you (1 Corinthians 15:33).
- ***Signs of deception:***
 - Attitude of infallibility (“I am right – do not argue with me!”).
 - Inability to reason or listen.
 - Antagonistic towards the truth.
 - Restlessness.
 - Abnormal talkativeness or silence.
- ***Openings for deception:***
 - Thoughts that are allowed in the mind.
 - Direct: Automatic handwriting/drawing, Eastern Meditation.
 - Indirect: Works on your emotions such as impatience, anger, and fear.
 - Lack of reason. Do not just follow blindly – test everything with the Word.

- Passivity, lack of the use of the will. People are often like sailing boats, always waiting for the Will of God – the “Wind” – to direct them. Problem is, it is not always the Wind of God that blowing!
- Lack of knowledge of the Word.
- You can recognize deception by division. It is partiality (cliques) in the Body of Messiah. A person who prefers cliques is under the influence of demonic oppression³². The Spirit of God is the Spirit of Unity and the Spirit of Truth (John 17:11, 21-22).

Romans 16:17-18 “17 I appeal to you, brethren, to be on your guard concerning those who create dissensions and difficulties and cause divisions, in opposition to the doctrine (the teaching) which you have been taught. [I warn you to turn aside from them, to] avoid them. 18 For such persons do not serve our Lord Christ but their own appetites and base desires, and by ingratiating and flattering speech, they beguile the hearts of the unsuspecting and simpleminded [people].”

If there are people who have been subject to deception, then the answer is not deliverance. They must be brought to a point of confrontation by presenting them with the Truth.

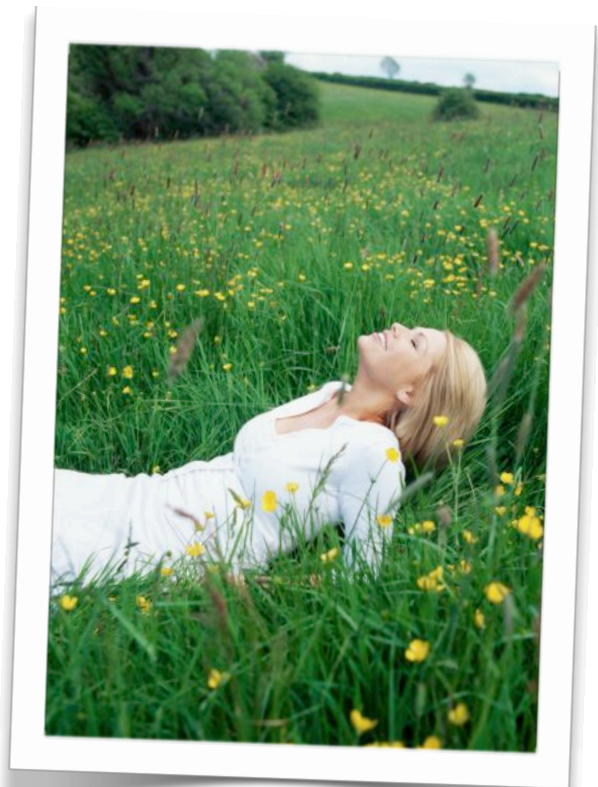
Passivity of the mind:

Passivity is not an inactive mind – where you are not thinking about something specific, your mind rests, but you can concentrate again and form thought patterns. Passivity is an inactive mind for long periods of time – such as a mind “dumbed down” by drugs, alcohol, worldly lusts, and so forth.

A peaceful mind can:

- Can focus.
- Can resist.
- Can choose and sift thoughts.

A normal mind can think about something specific [mind rests], but you can concentrate again and form a thought pattern. A passive mind is a mind out of control. It thinks continuously, in all directions. Whenever you want to think/concentrate, it feels like an iron band around your mind, or clouds of cotton wool that you want to remove. A passive mind can also be caused by extreme stress and exhaustion – you become too tired to think or decide.



³² Additional Scripture references: Galatians 5:20; 1 Corinthians 11:18-19; Titus 3:10; 1 Timothy 4:1; James 3:14-16; 2 Peter 2:1.

“He allows his reasoning ability to go into a state of lethargy and welcomes any thought that springs up in that state of lethargy ... If man does not want to use his intelligence, neither will God do it, but evil spirits will. They require an empty brain and a passive will ... If one allows his mind to stop functioning: thinking, seeking and deciding, and not test and control his experiences and actions according to the Bible, he invites satan to penetrate his mind and to deceive him.”³³

You have to train your mind to test all commands. You must learn to discern and sift your thoughts.

We see that Ezekiel reasons with God:

*Ezekiel 4:12-15 “12 And you shall eat your food as barley cakes and you shall bake it with human dung as fuel in the sight of the people. 13 And the Lord said, Even thus shall the children of Israel eat their defiled bread among the nations to whom I will drive them. 14 Then said I, **Ah, Lord God! Behold, I have never defiled myself.** From my youth up even till now have I not eaten of that which dies of itself or is torn in pieces; neither did there ever come abominable flesh into my mouth. 15 Then He said to me, Behold, I will let you use **cow’s dung** instead of human dung, and you shall prepare your food with it.”*

The disciples studied the Scriptures:

*Acts 17:11 “11 Now these [Jews] were **better disposed and more noble** than those in Thessalonica, for they were entirely ready and accepted and welcomed the message [concerning the attainment through Christ of eternal salvation in the kingdom of God] with **inclination of mind and eagerness, searching and examining the Scriptures daily to see if these things were so.**”*

Depression.

Depression is like sinking sand. It is a flood of negative thoughts that lead you to focus on yourself and all attention is given to your circumstances – you then believe that they are bigger than God – you have a huge pity party!

A sense of hopelessness, discouragement and despair overwhelm you! The enemy’s plan is to heap up so much hopelessness and despair upon you that your inner strength is drained – you are always tired – you do not have courage for anything else.

If your mind is not passive, you will be able to take these thoughts and resist them. A normal mind can focus, resist, and choose and sift thoughts. However, a passive mind will eat up everything, believe everything – this causes confusion and restlessness. It is like a naughty child, a passive mind needs discipline – God’s Word.

- **Causes of passivity:**

- Idleness – inactivity up to the point where you lose control.
- Exhaustion – stress – burn-out (too tired to think).

³³ Quotes by Watchman Nee

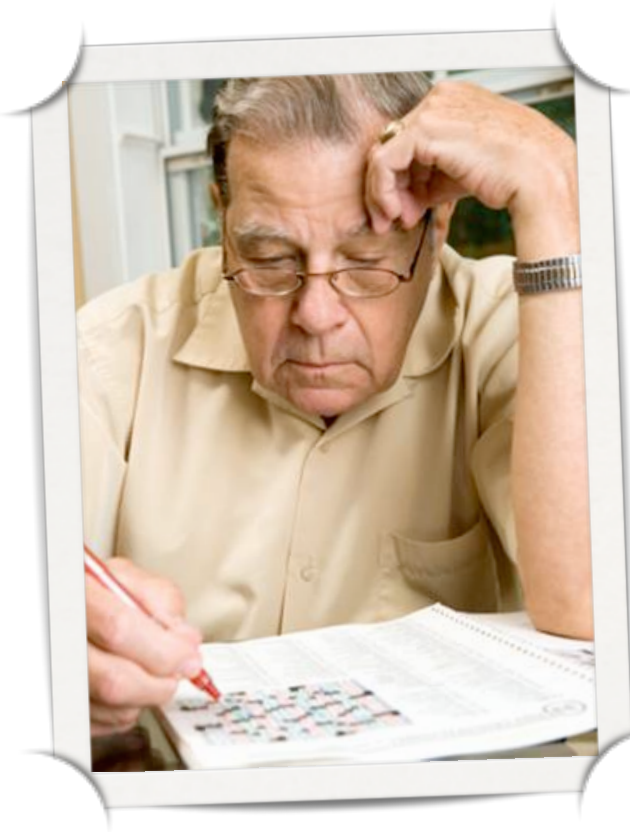
- Illness – lie in bed with no stimulation.
- Emotional problems – the mind gets stuck on patterns of worry you cannot control, you stay focused on the problem.
- Alcohol and drugs.
- Certain types of music have a detrimental (hypnotic) effect on the sub-conscious – examples include Reggae and voodoo drums.
- TV, films, video/computer games have a narcotic effect and dull the mind so you do not resist. They also disrupt the learning process.
- **Definition of passivity:**
 - A condition in where you put your mind in neutral and you are not in control of what comes in. Like the wall of a dam that breaks and thoughts come in like flood waters – no control.
 - Passivity describes the opposite state of activity. For the believer it implies the following:
 - Loss of self-control – in the sense that a person controls all departments in his personal being.
 - A question to ask yourself is ... if you choose not to think of something, and try by an act of your will not to think of it, but yet those thoughts still force their way into your mind, are you in control of your mind?
 - Loss of free will – in the sense that the person exercises his will as the directive principle of personal control, in harmony with the will of God.
 - A question to ask yourself is ... are you bound in thought patterns and behavior that you would prefer to be free of?
- **Symptoms of passivity:**
 - Sudden thought flashes interrupting your thoughts or while reading Bible/ praying.
 - Sudden cutting off of thoughts while conversing/witnessing. (blank out).
 - Thoughts captivated by patterns of fear, worry, rejection, anxiety, and so forth.
 - Is the stove off? Are the doors locked? You have a compulsion to check!
 - Senseless unwise tendencies.
 - “You must take risks and walk by faith.”
 - “You are more spiritual than anyone else”.
 - Uncontrolled imagination.
 - Sleeplessness and disturbing dreams.
 - For example, sexual dreams can be as a result of a demonic marriage with a spiritual spouse.
 - Forgetfulness (this can also be as a result of shock), loss of memory, poor memory. You are always making lists.
 - Inability to communicate – quiet (it is too much effort to talk) or persistent talking (do not think what you say – talk any nonsense).

- Lack of concentration.
- Inability to reason – you may nod your head and blink your eyes but nobody's home!
- Poor judgment (Saul is an example of a mind out of control - believing lies, jealous.
- Double-mindedness, indecision, wavers.
- Passivity, when there should be action; procrastination and lingering.
- Hyperactivity, out of control. Cannot be restful.
- Excessive rashness and impulsiveness.
- If you have suffered from a passive mind with thoughts that oppress, drive and paralyze, you will have to resist them and do spiritual warfare before you will be victorious. Remember: it is a process and takes time ... it is not just a prayer.

God has created you to control your mind. He wants to bring you to a point where:



- Your thoughts are under control;
- You are not driven, but led by the Spirit of God;
- Peace reigns in your mind;
- Your mind is free to focus on God; and
- You are free to receive the Truth of God.



On the other hand, passivity will:

- Hinder you from spiritual growth – no victory;
- Hinder you from receiving the Word of God;
- Hinder you from hearing from God;
- Hinder you from meditation and study;
- (It may) cause deception.

Oppression is not being able to control my thoughts, which gives me over to any thought and/or wave of negative thoughts – rebellion, depression, heaviness, confusion, and so forth.

A Helpful tip ...

You may find this a helpful tip ... if you want to stretch your mind to be able to retain the Word of God and to improve

your concentration, it will be very helpful to listen to teachings over and over which will help you to receive more and more of the Truth of the Word. You will find that you will have more control over your thoughts and will start to live a life of victory!

The mind – section two:

If you get victory in your thoughts, you will have to maintain this victory in the other areas of your life. Moods and actions are manipulated by wrong thoughts. Satan will try to plant negative thoughts in our minds, which affect our EMOTIONS. For instance, you get up in the morning with negative thoughts that manipulate you for the rest of the day. Or just before church, you get a flood of negative thoughts – you are irritated, angry, rebellious, throughout the service. This causes you to lose your joy – this is dangerous territory! The flesh is actually reckoned with in your thought life.

REMEMBER: We will never reach the point where our mind will not return to the flesh if it is left alone ... weeds come up automatically.

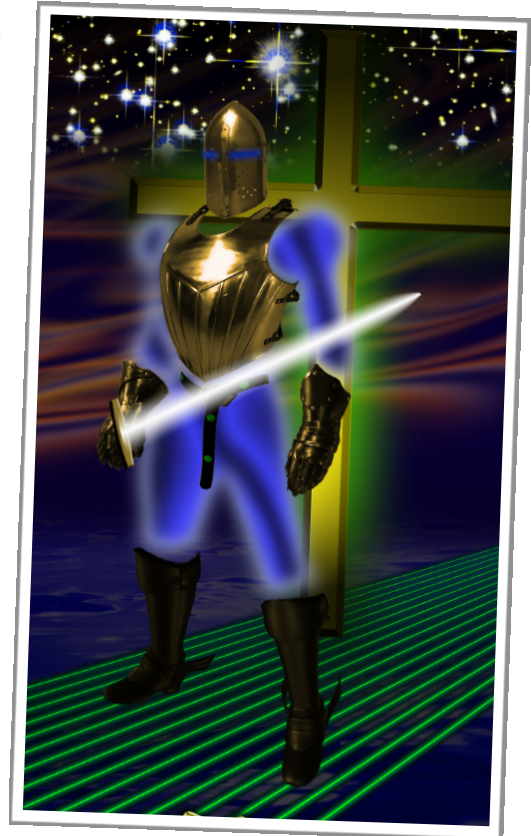
The natural mind resists the knowledge of God. By reading the Word, we allow the Truth to penetrate every part of our mind. We will then walk a straight and steadfast road. Our emotions cause us to wander – up and down – this is why our emotions must be brought under the Rule of Messiah.

Truth is the key to a renewed mind. Truth can stop wrong thoughts from making a nest in your mind. Every temptation comes to you in terms of a thought. You should analyze every thought and know that:

- It makes sense (divorce, murder, and so forth – does not make sense!).
- It is reasonable.
- It is not used to manipulate your mood or actions.

God's Solution for a disturbed mind:

- Put on your armor (Ephesians 6) and prepare for war. The devil controls you by certain fixed thought patterns that must be broken down. You will enter into warfare, a battle ... but it is necessary to get your mind back so that you can do the thinking.
- Let your mind always meditate on the Word. A neglected mind will always choose to feed the flesh. If you neglect your daily Bible study, your mind will be drawn to the things of the world (if you neglect a garden, the weeds come up automatically!). To walk according to the Spirit means to always keep your mind upon the things of the Spirit. The Spirit brings forth LIFE and shalom [peace]. The flesh brings forth death. The mind will determine according to which one you walk.
- If your mind rejects the Truth, it will never reach your spirit. By meditating you prepare your mind for the Word of God – if you have it in your mind, it will sink into your heart.

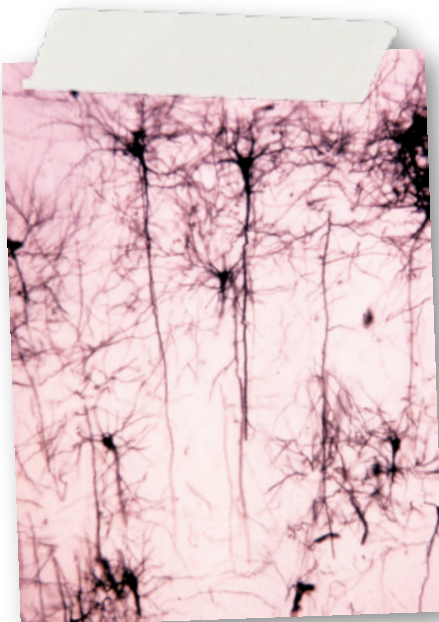


Advantages of Bible meditation:

Psalm 1:1-3 "BLESSED (HAPPY, fortunate, prosperous, and enviable) is the man who walks and lives not in the counsel of the ungodly [following their advice, their plans and purposes], nor stands [submissive and inactive] in the path where sinners walk, nor sits down [to relax and rest] where the scornful [and the mockers] gather. 2 But his delight and desire are in the law of the Lord, and on His law (the precepts, the instructions, the teachings of God) he habitually meditates (ponders and studies) by day and by night. [Rom. 13:8-10; Gal. 3:1-29; II Tim. 3:16.] 3 And he shall be like a tree firmly planted [and tended] by the streams of water, ready to bring forth its fruit in its season; its leaf also shall not fade or wither; and everything he does shall prosper [and come to maturity]. [Jer. 17:7, 8.]"

Joshua 1:8 "8 This Book of the Law shall not depart out of your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night, that you may observe and do according to all that is written in it. For then you shall make your way prosperous, and then you shall deal wisely and have good success."

- Take for example, take one Scripture a week ... force your mind to meditate on this Scripture. Choose a Scripture that covers the area where you are weak.
- Take every thought captive. You must do it! (Ephesians 4:17, 18, 23; 2 Corinthians 10:5). Stop fantasizing and begin to live your own life. Cast down barriers. Examine the origin of your thoughts and actively resist the thoughts contradicting the Word of God.
- Amusement is addictive³⁴. Why do Christians backslide? To be a Christian is to walk by FAITH. We must constantly be reminded of the LORD by praying, reading the Word, and so forth. The Word is tangible (see and feel). If the Christian spends more time with the world, he begins to think as the world does. Things of the LORD then become boring, unreal, and dry. The more time you spend, the greater your appetite for the Word becomes.
- Activate your mind. God will not take your mind away, but the devil will.
 - Make a decision – “My mind belongs to me and I will use it. I will not allow any external force to rule or use my mind!”
 - Train your mind to take the initiative in every action that you take, do not depend on others.
 - Train your mind by thinking – start to think, reason, concentrate, remember and understand. Force yourself to do things that was difficult to do.
- Determine the state of a normal mind and fight for your freedom until you have succeeded. Don't stop!
 - Wars are won by fighting, not running away.



The TREES³⁵ of the mind:

We must understand that thoughts are not just “empty” or “nothing”. They take up mental real-estate! As soon as you think something, that thought is forming³⁶ a “TREE” in your brain – what scientists call a dendrite [they look almost like trees, shown left].

When our brains are healthy and focused [meditating and renewing our minds] on the LORD and His Promises, the “trees” formed in our mind our beautiful and green.

However, when we have NEGATIVE thoughts – FEAR, depression, anger, trauma, emotional pain, and so forth – our “trees” grow black and dead.

³⁴ For additional study, please see our book *“Gateways Of Influence”*, available from the website or for order from the office.

³⁵ For additional study, please check out <http://drleaf.com/>.

³⁶ If the thought is a re-occurring theme, the TREE that has already been formed will be strengthened and more established.

You see ... Our brains were wired for LOVE! When we think negatively, this sends our brain into chaos because our brain doesn't have "negative" chemicals – only "positive" chemicals. Our brain then has to use the "LOVE" chemicals in wrong amounts, which grow ugly black trees.

It is these black trees that keep our minds in bondage, stress, depression, fear, and so forth. These trees actually act like road blocks in our "thought highways".

What kind of "trees" are you growing and nurturing?

For most of us, our brain-forest is BLACK with maybe only a few small green tress. BUT there is HOPE! God has designed our brains to be re-wired – to be renewed! Each one of us are our own "brain-surgeon"!



When a NEGATIVE thought – a black tree – comes to mind, we have THREE choices:

1. **IGNORE** the thought and suppress it. This doesn't help since the tree remains a BLOCKAGE in our subconscious.
2. **ENTERTAIN** the thought and keep growing the black tree.
3. Or **MELT** down the tree by speaking, believing, and meditating on the LORD and His Word – growing a green tree instead.

This is the practical process of mind renewal – melting down the black trees by taking our thoughts captive, and by allowing God's Truth and Light to dispel our darkness.

How long does it take to melt down a black tree? Only twenty-one days! **Try it!**

REMEMBER: Counsellors cannot take your thoughts captive! YOU have to do this!

Characteristics of a liberated mind:

- Thoughts subject to Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] (2 Corinthians 10:5).
- A mind tuned to your spirit (Romans 8:6).
- A mind that is free to:
- Concentrate,
- Observe,

- Remember,
- Reason,
- Understand.

REMEMBER: To renew your mind is to achieve the highest and best that God has determined for you.

How God speaks³⁷:

- The Holy Spirit reveals the will of God to the spirit of man so that he can know what it is.
- Through his mind he understands the meaning of this revelation.
- With his will he enters into spiritual power.

REMEMBER: You cannot walk in a revelation until you understand it. Then you use your will. It lets the Truth function in your spiritual life.

Insight of the mind:

- The mind will remain darkened to the degree that truth fails to penetrate the mind.
- Satan penetrates the mind to the degree in which the mind has been darkened.
- A mind that is closed to Truth is a clear sign of deception.
- A passive mind gives free access to demonic powers.
- Revelation that comes through a passive mind is subject to deception.
- A disturbed mind is detrimental to your spiritual life (Isaiah 26:3; Philippians 4:6-8).
- All guidance from God is given through your spirit. This guidance gives us the opportunity to make a choice – we are always brought to the point of making a decision.
- The mind must not be controlled by emotions (2 Timothy 1:7).

Conclusion:

- Spiritual growth and the renewal of the mind are definitely linked.
- You are responsible to renew your mind (Ephesians 4:23).
- The renewing comes as you allow God's Truth to penetrate every area of your thoughts.

³⁷ Principles by Watchman Nee

Dealing with un-Godly beliefs [lies] ...

Un-Godly beliefs are formed primarily from TWO sources:

- The natural of unredeemed mind.
- Negative experiences [hurts, pain] – most often those of our childhood.

Un-Godly beliefs [lies] from experiences:



A great source of our unGodly beliefs is childhood hurts, traumas, and negative experiences. These make a very strong impression on us. For example, the child whose father misses all of his ball games, all of his birthday parties, and is never there when he needs guidance, may form such beliefs as the following:

•“I am not important because my dad does not have time for me.”

•“My dad will not be there for me when I need him.”

Even more serious un-Godly beliefs are formed by the child, who trying to intervene as his parents are fighting, is told ... "Shut up you pip-squeak, we did not even have all these problems before you came along!" He concludes that:

•“Things would be better if I had not been born. My life is a mistake.”

- **“It is better to keep my mouth shut and my feelings to myself. If I express them I will just get in trouble (he learns to "stuff" or "hide" his feelings).”**

Even as a potter molds and shapes the clay, so our hurtful experiences mould and shape our beliefs. If the foundation of the belief system laid during childhood is misshaped and distorted, the life that is built upon that foundation will also be misshaped and distorted.

In addition, negative experiences occurring during the adult years can cause further un-Godly beliefs to be formed. The impact of problems in business, marriage, and church, or the experience of accidents, natural disasters, or tragedies, can cause us to believe lies about ourselves, others, and God.

Un-Godly Beliefs from the unrenewed [natural] mind of mankind:

The largest, most tainted, source of ungodly beliefs comes from the natural, unredeemed mind. These beliefs, often so seemingly logical and appealing, reek with worldly standards of man.

Today they are infused with ideals of worldly success, popularity, and the self-made man. They encourage us to "be in charge," "to do our own thing," or in the words of various cult organizations, "to create our own reality."

If God is mentioned, He is limited to the "God within," and He is more like a tool than LORD. These beliefs are like poison gas, unseen but lethal.

Surrounded by the beliefs that pervade our culture, we as Christians fail to detect how tightly they are woven into the fabric of our own partly sanctified minds.

It is the natural, unsanctified mind then, handling life's hurts and traumas, that is chiefly responsible for the un-Godly belief system that we all have. One thing that it does as it tries to protect itself from hurt is to wonder "what if?" It is not uncommon for the imagination to run wild, as we either fear/worry about terrible things happening to us or convince ourselves that we are no good or shameful.

Because of this belief system, God insists that our minds need to be renewed (Romans 12:2).

Additional forces that shape our beliefs:

While it is hard to differentiate between the various forces that shape our beliefs, the following sources are also very influential.

- **Family heritage.**

Just as certainly as our families pass on to us a special fishing rod, a set of old china, or the corner cupboard, our families also pass on their beliefs, for better or for worse. As one marathon runner smoothly passes the baton to another, so parents pass on to their children their beliefs. Families are belief shapers!

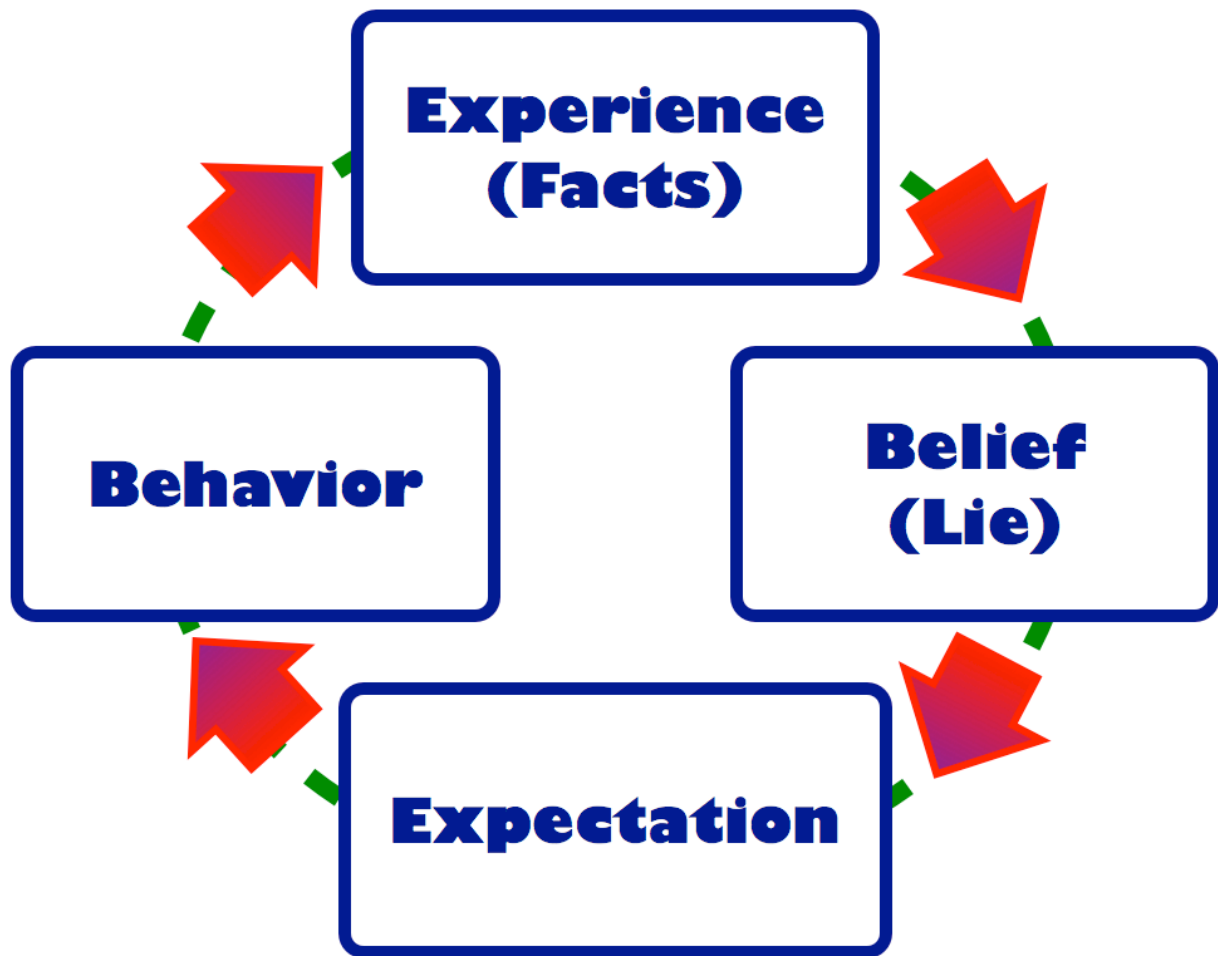
- **Repetition reinforces un-Godly beliefs.**

We are particularly influenced by our families' often repeated statements, especially ones about ourselves. Some families continually reinforce with such statements as "You will never amount to anything" or, "You are no good". In a friend's family it was, "Don't be a softie/sissie," meaning, "Do not be a coward."

These statements, often part of the child's daily diet, become the bone and marrow of his un-Godly belief system, a belief system that undermines his self-worth and ability to succeed.

The belief-expectation-cycle:

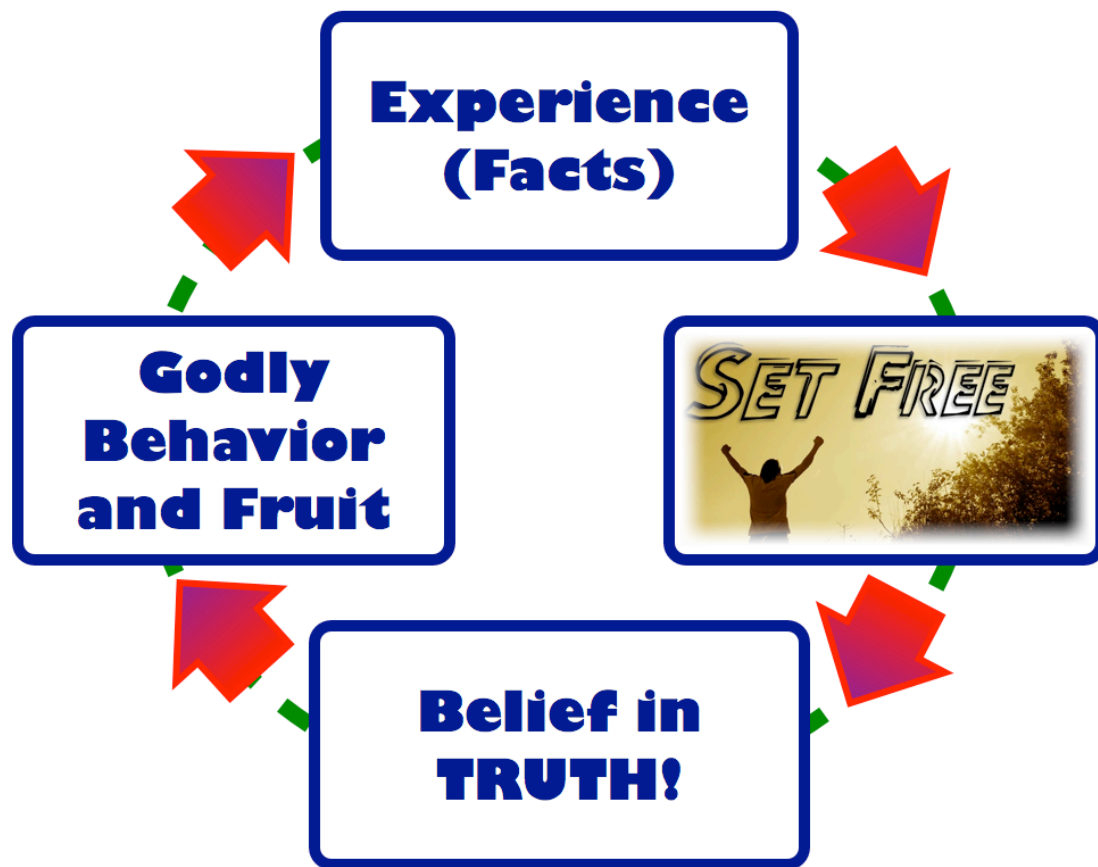
The above explanations can be diagrammed as the perpetual "Belief-Expectation-Cycle":



In this cycle, we see that experience leads to the formation of our beliefs.

- Our beliefs cause us to have certain expectations;
- These expectations govern our actions/behavior and they also "reach out" and effect others;
- Our behavior and other peoples' behavior directed toward us results in various experiences;
- And then these experiences further reinforce our old beliefs and cause new ones to be formed.

This cycle continues on indefinitely. The only way to stop the cycle for our un-Godly beliefs is to interpose the POWER of the TRUTH [Light] of God onto the cycle and bring it to a stop.



Then, as we begin to accept/experience God's TRUTH [Light] and let it change our beliefs, our expectations become positive, which lead to constructive behavior and good experiences. The same cycle that was killing us now begins to reinforce the new Godly Beliefs, further strengthening them. This helps us to build trust in God's Faithfulness to us, as He watches over His Word to perform it.

Quick summary:

Un-Godly beliefs result when the unredeemed mind attempts to make sense out of its contact with sin and the world, whether in our homes or in our culture. Un-Godly beliefs are also the result of emotional hurts and wounds. These beliefs are frequently passed down from one generation to the next, particularly in frequently repeated "put downs". God says, "Get rid of them!"

Results of un-Godly beliefs.

Our beliefs affect who we are, how we perceive ourselves, and how we relate to others, to the world around us, and to God. They determine how like Messiah we become, and even the quality of our walk of faith. They are like a vice-grip putting tight constraints on our lives, choking out the abundant life that Y'shua [Jesus] promises (John 10:10).

Un-Godly beliefs are like spiritual termites that quietly work behind the scenes undermining and eating away at that faith that has been established within us. They are going, "gobble, gobble, gobble," and eroding our foundations.

Un-Godly beliefs are, by definition, "unbelief". They hinder or block our faith in God and the TRUTH of His Promises. We hinder or shut off God's ability to bless us.

*Hebrews 11:6 "6 But **without faith it is impossible to please and be satisfactory to Him.** For whoever would come near to God must [necessarily] believe that God exists and that He is the rewarder of those who earnestly and diligently seek Him [out]."*

God doesn't "reward" unbelief or lack of faith. It is not too much to say, "We are what we believe," as the writer of Proverbs wrote:

*Proverbs 23:7 "7 **For as he thinks in his heart, so is he.** As one who reckons, he says to you, eat and drink, yet his heart is not with you [but is grudging the cost]."*

We use our un-Godly beliefs to justify our fleshly (old man) behavior (sin), rather than allowing the Holy Spirit to sanctify us.

*Romans 6:6-7,12 "6 **We know that our old (unrenewed) self was nailed to the cross with Him in order that [our] body [which is the instrument] of sin might be made ineffective and inactive for evil, that we might no longer be the slaves of sin.** 7 For when a man dies, he is freed (loosed, delivered) from [the power of] sin [among men]. 12 Let not sin therefore rule as king in your mortal (short-lived, perishable) bodies, to make you yield to its cravings and be subject to its lusts and evil passions."*

Even our beliefs about God Himself have the power to make our Christian life a fulfilling, growing experience ... or one that is stagnant, frustrating, and unfulfilling. How could we have joy if we believed the following:

- No matter how hard I try, it will not be enough to please God.
- God is waiting for me to make a mistake.
- God cares for others more than He cares for me.

These beliefs would undermine the very basis of any meaningful relationship with God. In extreme cases, un-Godly beliefs can result in a person having false or counterfeit identities. This occurs when he believes so many LIES about himself that his God-given identity is obscured or covered over.

This is probably always accompanied by demonic entities assuming the roles of the counterfeit identities. (Demonic identity personalities are not the same as dissociated or fragmented identities that have their origin from within the God-given identity.)

Un-Godly beliefs, whether based on the natural mind or on experiences of hurt can be crippling. They are the enemy of our faith. Because we have lived with them for so long and because they seem so natural, most of us are blind to them.

Common examples of un-Godly beliefs about ourselves:

- **Rejection, not belonging**

- I don't belong. I will always be on the outside (left out).
- My feelings don't count. No one cares what I feel.
- No one will love me or care about me just for myself.
- I will always be lonely. The special man (woman) in my life will not be there for me.
- I will isolate myself so that I won't be vulnerable to hurt and rejection any more.
- “ _____ ”.

- **Unworthiness, guilt, and shame.**

- I am not worthy to receive anything from God.
- I am the problem. When something is wrong, it is my fault.
- I am a bad person. If you knew the real me, you would reject me.
- I must wear a mask so that people won't find out how horrible I am and reject me.
- I have messed up so badly that I have missed God's best for me.
- “ _____ ”.

- **Doing to achieve self-worth, value, and recognition.**

- I will never get credit for what I do.
- My value is in what I do. I am valuable because I do good to others, because I am "successful".
- Even when I do/give my best, it is not good enough. I can never meet the standard.
- I will choose to be passive in order to avoid conflict that would risk others' disapproval.
- God doesn't care if I have a "secret life", as long as I appear to be good.
- “ _____ ”.

- **Controlling to avoid being hurt.**

- I have to plan every day of my life. I have to continually plan/strategize. I can't relax.
- The perfect life is one in which no conflict is allowed, and so there is peace.
- “ _____ ”.

- **Self-image.**
 - I am unattractive. God short-changed me.
 - I am doomed to have certain physical disabilities. They are just part of what I have inherited.
 - It is impossible to lose weight (or gain weight). I am just stuck.
 - I am not competent/complete as a man (woman).
 - “ _____ ”.
- **Personality traits.**
 - I will always be angry, shy, jealous, insecure, fearful,
 - “ _____ ”.
- **Identity.**
 - I should have been a boy (girl). Then my parents would have valued/loved me more, and so forth.
 - Men (women) have it better.
 - I will never be known or appreciated for my real self.
 - I will never really change and be as God wants me to be.
 - “ _____ ”.
- **Miscellaneous.**
 - I have wasted a lot of time and energy, some of my best years.
 - Turmoil is normal for me.
 - I will always have financial problems.
 - “ _____ ”.

Common examples of un-Godly beliefs about others:

- **Safety/Protection.**
 - I must be very guarded about what I say, since anything I say may be used against me.
 - I have to guard and hide my emotions and feelings. I can not give anyone the satisfaction of knowing that they have wounded or hurt me.
 - I'll not be vulnerable, humiliated, or shamed.
 - “ _____ ”.
- **Retaliation.**
 - The correct way to respond if someone offends me is to punish them by withdrawing and/or cutting them off.
 - “ _____ ”.

- **Victim.**
 - Authority figures will humiliate me and violate me.
 - They will just use and abuse me.
 - My value is based totally on others' judgment/prescription about me.
 - I am completely under their authority. I have no will or choice of my own.
 - I will not be known, understood, loved, or appreciated for who I am by those close to me.
 - “ _____ ”.
- **Hopelessness and helplessness.**
 - I am out there all alone. If I get into trouble or need help, there is no one to rescue me.
 - “ _____ ”.
- **Defective in Relationships.**
 - I will never be able to fully give or receive love. I don't know what it is.
 - If I let anyone get close to me, I may get my heart broken again. I can't let myself risk it.
 - If I fail to please you, I won't receive your pleasure and acceptance of me. Therefore, I must strive (perfectionism) even more. I must do whatever is necessary to try to please you.
 - “ _____ ”.
- **God.**
 - God loves other people more than He loves me.
 - God only values me for what I do. My life is just a means to an end.
 - No matter how much I try, I'll never be able to do enough or do it well enough to please God.
 - God is judging me when I relax. I have to stay busy about His work or He will abandon me.
 - God has let me down before. He may do it again. I can't trust Him, or feel secure with Him.
 - “ _____ ”.

Examples of the effects of un-Godly beliefs in specific areas.

Two examples in the areas of "Significance and Security" and "Negative Expectation" will show how destructive un-Godly beliefs can be.

- **Significance and Security.**

Our real significance and security is in God. If we only verbally agree with this, and do not believe it in our heart, we have an un-Godly belief. Concerning this, the Scripture says:

*Ephesians 1:6 “6 [So that we might be] to the praise and the commendation of His glorious grace (favor and mercy), **which He so freely bestowed on us in the Beloved.**”*

*Hebrews 13:5 “5 Let your character or moral disposition be **free from love of money [including greed, avarice, lust, and craving for earthly possessions]** and be satisfied with your present [circumstances and with what you have]; for He [God] Himself has said, I will not in any way fail you nor give you up nor leave you without support. [I will] not, [I will] not, [I will] not in any degree leave you helpless nor forsake nor let [you] down (relax My hold on you)! [Assuredly not!]”*

Rather than believing God, we believe that we will be disliked, rejected, or abused. Therefore, we must strive to find acceptance. We search for significance in many other places than God – in money, fame, sexual exploits, and so forth. Even though His Word tells us that we are created in His Image “for fellowship” and that He has a PLAN and a PURPOSE that will give us fulfillment.



As counsellors, when we see striving and little rest in a person's life, we have an important clue that un-Godly beliefs are in operation in the area of significance and security.

- Negative Expectation.

If we are full of negative expectations and fear about what is going to happen to us, we are not believing nor trusting what God is saying in His Word:

*1 John 4:4 “4 Little children, you are of God [you belong to Him] and have [already] defeated and overcome them [the agents of the antichrist], **because He Who lives in you is greater (mightier) than he who is in the world.**”*

*Romans 8:37 “37 **Yet amid all these things we are more than conquerors and gain a surpassing victory through Him Who loved us.**”*

*John 10:10 “10 The thief comes only in order to steal and kill and destroy. **I came that they may have and enjoy life, and have it in abundance (to the full, till it overflows).**”*

Christians expecting to fail, to have lack, to be mistreated by others, and so forth, or believing that whatever they do won't be adequate, who worry continually, or who are afraid of every new thing on the horizon (or what might appear on the horizon), are not walking in God's Provision or Promises:

*2 Peter 1:3 "3 For His divine power has bestowed upon us **all things that [are requisite and suited] to life and godliness, through the [full, personal] knowledge of Him Who called us by and to His own glory and excellence (virtue).**"*

When we as counsellors see a person living out of negative expectation, ministry for un-Godly beliefs is clearly indicated.

Higher Level of TRUTH than the facts.

In order for us to be transformed into the Image of God, what is in our mind has to be changed so that it lines up with God's Truth, not the facts of our experience. Here we are truly challenged.

First, there are the facts. Facts are what actually happened. For example:

- The wreck happened.
- The person had a disease.
- The business closed.
- The person confessed sin.

Facts are true, based on our experience in the here and now. BUT ... there is a higher level of truth than the facts. And that is God's Truth: what He says about the situation.

God's Truth is not seen by the natural man, who is looking at the facts, but by the spiritual man, who knows God's Transforming POWER. It is seen and embraced through faith.

*1 Corinthians 2:14-15 "14 **But the natural, nonspiritual man does not accept or welcome or admit into his heart the gifts and teachings and revelations of the Spirit of God,** for they are folly (meaningless nonsense) to him; and he is incapable of knowing them [of progressively recognizing, understanding, and becoming better acquainted with them] because they are spiritually discerned and estimated and appreciated. 15 But the spiritual man **tries all things** [he examines, investigates, inquires into, questions, and discerns all things], yet is himself to be put on trial and judged by no one [he can read the meaning of everything, but no one can properly discern or appraise or get an insight into him]."*

But we are not just natural men. We are men and women whose spirits are alive, who have been born again. And we can discern (appraise) the spiritual truth that has to do with what God says about a fact or situation. By the power of His Spirit working within us, we can embrace His Truth.

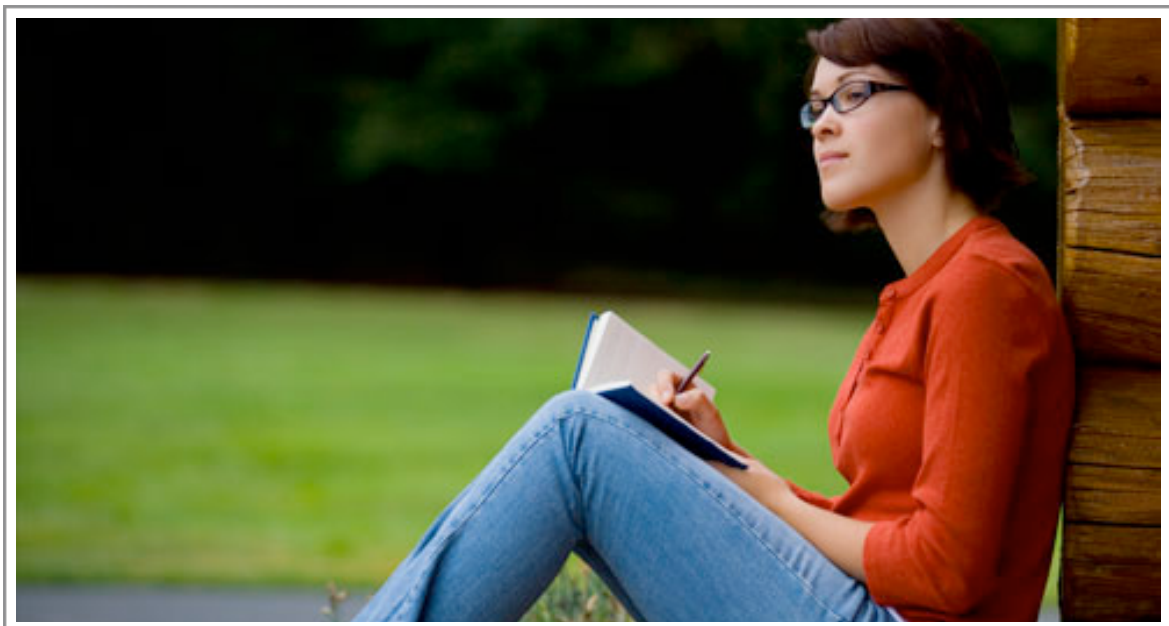
The following examples illustrate the difference between believing factual truth and believing God's TRUTH.

- Apparent Fact – “I’m a victim of difficult circumstances”.
- ***God’s Truth – “I am an over comer. I am more than a conqueror.”***
- Apparent Fact – I am just a nobody, going nowhere”.
- ***God’s Truth – “I chose you before the foundation of the world. My plans for you are good”.***
- Apparent Fact – “The leadership of this church can’t be trusted”.
- ***God’s Truth – “I am building My Church”.***
- Apparent Fact – “So much is changing, I can’t count on anything”.
- ***God’s Truth – “I am the same yesterday, today and forever. Put your trust in Me”.***
- Apparent Fact – “I am going through many trials and difficulties”.
- ***God’s Truth – “I will bring you through trials that I may mature you”.***

How to deal with un-Godly beliefs.

1. Define the un-Godly belief.

Express the un-Godly belief as a statement, usually declarative. It helps to make a stark, blunt, clear statement, to emphasize the reality of the unbelief. Usually the beliefs can be stated in two to three sentences. If the counselee can be honest with himself, he may be shocked at how much fear, resentment, and/or unbelief the statement contains.



2. Define the Godly Belief.

A good Godly Belief is a statement that agrees with what God's Word says is true. Again, this is usually a declarative statement. We express the Godly way of looking at the same concept/principle/belief that is revealed by the un-Godly belief.

Sometimes we write the Godly Belief for the counselee. At other times, depending on how the Holy Spirit leads us in assessing the ability of the counselee, we let the counselee write the Godly Belief.

We help him do this by discussing his thoughts and making notes of his prayers during the ministry time, as the Holy Spirit leads him in praying/affirming the new Godly Belief. We let him complete the writing of his Godly Beliefs after the counselling session.

3. Minister to the un-Godly belief.

Use the ministry steps in the next section to break the power of the un-Godly beliefs and to set the stage for the Godly Beliefs to come forth. Go through the process of forgiveness, repentance, and renouncing the un-Godly beliefs. Declare and receive the Godly Beliefs.

4. Use Scripture to support and verify that the new belief is Godly.

Pray and ask the Holy Spirit to lead the counselee to Scriptures that support the Godly Beliefs during his prayer time (at home). Instruct him to add the Scriptures to the Godly Beliefs and to include the Scriptures as a part of his prayer time. We want his faith to be solidly attached to the Word, and not onto our opinion.

5. Fine tune what has been written.

Instruct the counselee to rewrite the Godly Beliefs, to use words that really express what he knows that God wants him to believe. Have him fine tune and adjust the statement until it "fits" him.

6. Most essential for freedom.

Stress to the counselee that it is important to take seriously the forty day period needed to change any habit, if he desires to gain real freedom. Since his patterns of thinking are habits, it takes about this amount of time for the newly "planted" beliefs to be well rooted and to begin to manifest in his life.

Have him continue to pray that the Holy Spirit will plant the new beliefs deep into his heart. Have him continue to meditate on their truth and meaning. The point is not just positive confession, but rather to have his heart changed, so that he can begin to think, make decisions, and have expectations corresponding to a Godly Beliefs system.

Example – this is an un-Godly belief in the area of not belonging. The person for whom it has been written had been left and ignored by his father. He had never bonded with either parent.

- Un-Godly belief – “I am alone in the world, I have no one who cares. I have to make my own way.”
- Possible Godly beliefs – “I am not alone in the world, because God has given me Himself, my wife, and my family of God ...”
 - God cares, my wife cares, and my brothers and sisters in Messiah care for me and about me.
 - I can let go of having to make my own way, because I am God's child. He leads me, He establishes my path.
 - I belong completely to God my Father, Y'shua [Jesus] my Messiah, and the Holy Spirit my Comforter. I belong to my wife, as God has and is causing us to become one. I belong to the Body of Messiah, and they belong to me.

Helpful hints for writing Godly Beliefs.

The following are some helpful hints for writing Godly Beliefs in the categories of self, others, and God.



1. Godly Beliefs Concerning Self.

In this category, we might want to include statements such as "with God's help" or "by His grace He will enable me to ...", so that we don't have to face the entire transition from old to new in one step. Otherwise, our new Godly Beliefs could sound like a lie to us. For example, trying to help someone change from "I can never remember names" to "I always remember names."

Before the new Godly Beliefs begins to produce a harvest, while they are still not remembering names, the Godly Beliefs toward which they are headed would be a lie. For example:

•Un-Godly belief – “I will always be lonely”.

•***Godly Belief – “With God's help, I will begin to reach out to others, and also to receive from them. He has designed me to fit into His Body”.***

Sometimes, in beliefs concerning self, a Godly Belief amounts to a declaration (what I will decide to do), regardless of other people or situations. For example:

- Un-Godly belief – “I will always drift from job to job, and never find my real direction”.
- ***Godly Belief – “As I submit myself to God, He will direct me in the plan and purpose He has for me”.***

2. Godly Beliefs Concerning Others.

In a situation in which the un-Godly belief involves another person, we need to look at what God says is possible for that person, not how he is behaving now. For example:

- Un-Godly belief – “My husband always gets angry at me”.
- ***Godly Belief – “God can enable my husband to not only control the anger, but to become completely free of this bondage”.***

NOTE, that we no longer identify the problem with the person, but we separate him from the problem. We focus on what God says, on what God can do. The Godly Belief is a statement of faith.

3. Godly Beliefs concerning God Himself or His Word.

Un-Godly beliefs about God and/or His Word are very common. We must choose to believe what He says about Himself, rather than our fears or resentments toward Him. It doesn't hurt to remember that our beliefs about God are strongly influenced by our experiences and relationship with our father. For example:

- Un-Godly belief – “God heals others, but He won't (or can't) heal me”.
- ***Godly Belief – “God is no respecter of persons. He loves all of His children equally. His healing is for me”.***

In approaching un-Godly beliefs, we use the "Jeremiah" process of uprooting and tearing down before we can build and plant. The ministry process that follows is a method for uprooting the old, so that the ground is prepared for the new Godly Beliefs.

4. Practical application.

- Un-Godly belief – “You can't trust anyone.”
- Reaction – “But that's really true, I haven't been able to trust anyone! Are you going to tell me that I have to trust everyone? Because I just can't do that!”
- Response – We know that this feels true based on your life experiences. We're not denying the reality of what has happened to you.

- With this belief in place, you'll have to live a guarded life with no real, true relationships. It leaves you totally on your own, and it even prevents you from trusting God.
- ***God's Truth – "I will NEVER leave you defenceless and without protection".***
- **Step 1: Forgive the People.**
 - "LORD, I forgive the people who helped me form the ungodly belief that I can't trust anyone." Name each individual one by one and talk about what they had done to help form and establish the belief that the counselee cannot trust anymore.
- **Step 2: Ask Forgiveness.**
 - "LORD, forgive me for how I have participated in this un-Godly belief by isolating myself, by not ever sharing my real thoughts or feelings with anyone else and by not even trusting that You will answer my prayers."
- **Step 3: Forgive Yourself.**
 - "I forgive myself for believing this un-Godly belief."



"But what if I don't really feel like it inside?" This is not about feelings, its about faith and confession. As the new Godly Beliefs are fully established, your feelings will follow. Forgive yourself by faith and soon you will feel it in your heart.

- **Step 4: Renounce and BREAK the agreement with the un-Godly belief.**

- “I renounce and break agreement with the ungodly belief, ‘I can’t trust anybody. Now I choose to believe and receive my new Godly Belief _____.”
- Wait and ask the Lord what He wants you to believe.
- “I can trust the Lord to give me discernment and wisdom on who I can trust and to what degree. He will never fail me!”
- Go through each un-Godly belief step by step as laid out in our examples above.

Establishing TRUE identity vs. false identity.

A good idea is to have a black/white board and to divide the board in half. On the left write the heading False Identity and on the right, True Identity. Then write down every word that helped create the false identity. You can now move to the other side of the board – true identity. Under this heading write down the words that align with God’s Word and what He said about the counselee.



False Identity	True Identity
Broken	Mended
Bad	Godly
Unloved	Loved
Afraid	Courageous
Ashamed	Worthy
Abandoned	Accepted & Welcomed

When the board is filled on both sides it is time for prayer. Stand on the left-hand side and renounce and break agreement with those words. As you do, erase each word.

"I renounce and break agreement with the false identity of:

- Broken,
- Bad,
- Afraid,
- Ashamed,
- " _____ " .

It's like stripping off old dirty rags from your past and having a new robe placed on you.

*Isaiah 61:10 "10 I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul will exult in my God; for He has clothed me with the garments of salvation, He has covered me with the **robe of righteousness**, as a bridegroom decks himself with a garland, and as a bride adorns herself with her jewels."*

"Now I receive, accept and choose to believe the True Identity. I receive, accept and choose to believe my true identity, that:

- I am mended.
- I am Godly.
- I am loved.
- I am courageous.
- I am worthy.
- I have double honour.
- I am cherished.
- I am part of the family of God.
- I am special, healed, trusting, and secure.
- " _____ " .



Counsellor's Prayer:

We curse all the fruit in _____ (counselee's) life from the un-Godly beliefs and the false identity. We pray that every habit and pattern of living and thinking will be changed to align with his/her new Godly beliefs. We take authority over the strongholds and every demon assigned to them. You have no right to _____ (counselee's) mind anymore. We bind all demonic activity and communication in the Name of Y'shua [Jesus].

FATHER, let _____ (counselee) new Godly beliefs and true identity take root, grow, and prosper in her life. We command your heart, mind, will and body to line up with the truth of your Godly beliefs and true identity, in the Name of Y'shua [Jesus].

FATHER, we ask You to give _____ (counselee) the faith and discipline to establish the mind of Messiah within him/her. We bless you _____ (counselee) in the Name of Y'shua [Jesus]!

VERY IMPORTANT! Make a list of the Godly Beliefs and True Identity for the counselee to take home so that they can read over them several times per day – for FORTY DAYS! Praying through and meditating on God's Truth for forty days – particularly in a specific area – will establish the Truth in the counselee through renewing their mind.

PRAYER: May the Holy Spirit illuminate your mind with revelation in hearing, discerning, writing, and ministering to un-Godly beliefs. May this practice bring understanding and clarity in all aspects of helping the Holy Spirit renew our minds. AMEN!



Dealing with depression ...

- How can one tell depression from discouragement?

Depression is by far the most common form of mental suffering. It is however, a poorly defined condition, which means different things to different people. We must be able to distinguish between the transient "depression" of someone unhappy about a recent disappointment and the severe crushing despair of one who has for many years lost all interest in life.

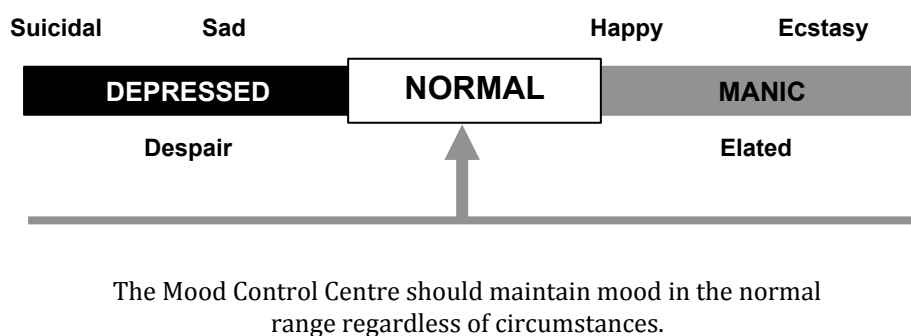
We choose to use the term "discouragement" for temporary mood fluctuations, which would be commonly referred to as the "blues" and would never be considered an "illness". "Depression" is reserved for prolonged disorders of mood, which require professional help.

It is not always easy to distinguish between these two conditions and it requires considerable training and experience. There is presently no blood test or X-ray that will diagnose mental illness. Understanding what a person is thinking and feeling is the only way to separate these conditions.

Discouragement is transient with an obvious cause and the person is still able to enjoy other unrelated activities. It resolves with time and supportive counseling. A discouraged person can still be hopeful, with good thought control and concentration.

Depression is usually very prolonged with unrelenting symptoms. It is often, though not always characterized by sadness. There is an inability to enjoy activities and all interests fade. There is general hopelessness and a lack of ability to control or steer thoughts. This is a much more disabling condition than discouragement.

Figure 1:



- What causes depression?

It is important to realize that forming a thought is as physical an event as blinking an eye or moving your arm. Nerve cells in the brain allow you to form thoughts in the same way that they permit movement. We only have full control of our thoughts when all the nerve cells are working properly to give us that control. This process is subject to malfunction like any other part of the body.

The brain is divided into regions or "control centers" that direct every activity of the body. The mood control centre is responsible for maintaining normal mood, which allows you to be relaxed, content, feeling in control, concentrating normally, clear headed and coping with stress.

There are very specific chemical substances called neurotransmitters, which are produced, by brain cells to regulate these body functions. If anything happens to disrupt the production of these chemicals, then the control centre will malfunction and symptoms or disability will result.

If for example, brain cells malfunction in the movement control centre, then you will have difficulty with movement. A stroke is an example of this kind disability. If the malfunction is in the mood control centre, then mood begins to fluctuate outside of your control or it slides into a depression, which will not lift.

It is now well established that mental illnesses are usually the result of an imbalance in the chemicals associated with mood control. This tendency to malfunction is usually inherited. Symptoms may just appear without reason or depression may come as a result of stressful circumstances that bring out the inherited tendency to have a mood disorders.

As a result of the discovery of the above facts, depression is now seen as a physical illness needing and responding to medical treatment.

- *Brain control regions.*

Due to the genetic nature of the condition, a triggering stress is not always needed. Sometimes depression just develops over years with no obvious cause, much like diabetes.

There is no doubt however, that stress can trigger a depressive illness in someone who already has the genetic potential for depression. If there is very strong genetic potential, then it will take very little stress to trigger an illness. If the genetic link is weaker, then more stress is needed to cause disability.

The treatment of depression is the same whether or not it was triggered by stress. If the chemical imbalance is present, it can be treated regardless of the cause. Think of it this way. If someone breaks their leg, they will need a cast. It doesn't matter if it was caused by a fall or a car accident; the treatment of the resulting disability is the same.

When the chemical imbalance is corrected, the person is then better able to deal with their stresses, usually with the help of a counsellor.

- *What are the symptoms of depression?*

Depression has a very wide variety of symptoms and each individual shows a different pattern. Generally speaking these people usually have been sad for prolonged periods without obvious cause. They have lost interest in most activities of life, which previously gave them pleasure.

They feel defeated, useless, hopeless, unable to pray, punished by God, and unworthy of anyone's love or God's forgiveness. They may feel that God has left them or is no longer listening to them due to unknowingly committing the "unpardonable sin."



They consider themselves to be a failure as a Christian and as a person. Plagued by guilt, they condemn themselves for not being able to "snap out of it". Some have increased irritability and will attack everyone around them as the likely cause for their unhappiness. They find it hard to relax or ever feel content. There is a diminished interest in sex or any kind of intimacy.

Depressed people often have great difficulty falling asleep due to persistent and uncontrollable racing of unpleasant thoughts or worries through their mind. Many will awaken at four a.m. and will be unable to fall asleep again because of the same racing of thoughts. Others oversleep and use it as an escape from an unpleasant reality.

Concentration on work, pleasure or reading becomes impossible while struggling with the continuous stream of unpleasant and depressing thoughts, which cannot be kept out of the mind.

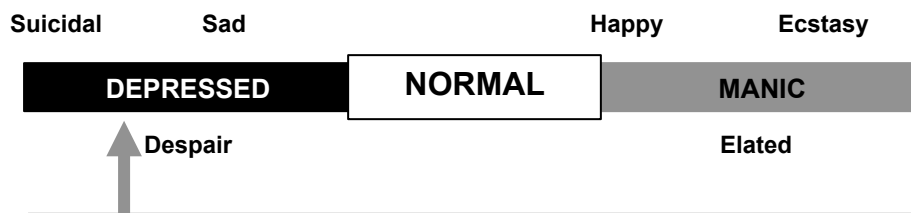
When reading they will see the words but have to reread the sentence many times before understanding what was said. It is hard for them to keep their minds on anything. Their memory seems to fail and it becomes very difficult to finish any project due to fatigue or lack of interest.

Fatigue becomes overwhelming in eighty percent of depressed people. Daily responsibilities which were previously easy and pleasant are seen as enormous undertakings. Everything becomes such an effort that all activities are avoided. A depressed person also finds it very hard to make decisions since their self-confidence is so low and concentration is so impaired. Anxiety becomes a continuous thought pattern, which cannot be turned off. The depressed person will worry about everything, even tiny details of life, which never before attracted their attention. Fifty percent of depressed people can't stop worrying. Intense fear and worry may induce unusual behavior patterns like repetitive hand washing to rid themselves of a sensation of being dirty. This is also known as Obsessive Compulsive Disorder (O.C.D.).

There may be a preoccupation with body symptoms and frequent visits to doctors with complaints that can never be diagnosed or treated. Chronic pain is often present and it hides the underlying depression.

Medical treatment is then directed at the pain so the mood remains untreated and the emotional disability continues undetected and untreated. Sixty percent of chronic pain patients have a medical depression but they may hide behind the legitimacy of pain to prevent the detection of a less socially acceptable condition.

Figure 2:



Chemical imbalance prevents the Mood Control Centre from restoring normal mood so thoughts slide into depression.

Socialization is difficult during depression and it becomes very uncomfortable to attend church. Depressed people find that they don't get anything out of church services and often complain that they "aren't being fed." They have multiple complaints about the Pastor or members. It is very common for them to change churches frequently in search of a congregation that will fill their needs.

Crying becomes a frequent event. There is a tendency to blame others, especially spouse, family members or God for their state of unhappiness.

All of the above symptoms by themselves are common and do not always indicate a mental illness. When however, a number of these signs are present continuously for over two months, then treatable illness must be suspected.

The onset of depression is often during the teen years but at that time the symptoms are dismissed as just an "adolescent phase". Most patients have been suffering for over ten years before they realize that help is available. The onset is so insidious that it goes unnoticed and the person and their family just adjust to the changes. It becomes the new normal for that person so they sense no need of corrective treatment.

Depression affects every part of our ability to think and feel. It clouds our personality and changes how we interpret events and how we relate to others. It magnifies physical pain, disrupts relationships, blocks communication and changes our eating and sleeping patterns. It also affects everyone around us in a negative way. There are very few illnesses known that cut such a broad path of devastation and disability. It is a very common condition but is often undiagnosed since it can be masked by chronic pain, fatigue, and burnout and there is no test to prove it.

What is contemplative prayer?

It is important to first define “contemplative prayer.” Contemplative prayer is not just “contemplating while you pray.” The Bible instructs us to pray with our minds (1 Corinthians 14:15), so, clearly, prayer does involve contemplation. However, praying with your mind is not what “contemplative prayer” has come to mean. Contemplative prayer has slowly increased in practice and popularity along with the rise of the emerging church movement—a movement which embraces many unscriptural ideas and practices. Contemplative prayer is one such practice.



Contemplative prayer, also known as “centering prayer,” is a meditative practice where the practitioner focuses on a word and repeats that word over and over for the duration of the exercise. While contemplative prayer is done differently in the various groups that practice it, there are similarities. Contemplative prayer involves choosing a sacred word as the symbol of your intention to consent to God's presence and action within. Contemplative prayer usually includes sitting comfortably and with eyes closed, settling briefly and silently, introducing the sacred word. When a contemplative pray-er becomes aware of thoughts, he/she is to return ever so gently to the sacred word.

Although this might sound like an innocent exercise, this type of prayer has no scriptural support whatsoever. In fact, it is just the

opposite of how prayer is defined in the Bible. “Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.” (Philippians 4:6). “In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. Until now you have not asked for anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and your joy will be complete” (John16:23-24). These verses and others clearly portray prayer as being comprehensible communication with God, not an esoteric, mystical meditation.

Contemplative prayer, by design, focuses on having a mystical experience with God. Mysticism, however, is purely subjective, and does not rely upon truth or fact. Yet the Word of God has been given to us for the very purpose of basing our faith, and our lives, on Truth (2 Timothy 3:16-17). What we know about God is based on fact; trusting in experiential knowledge over the biblical record takes a person outside of the standard that is the Bible.

Contemplative prayer is no different than the meditative exercises used in Eastern religions and New Age cults. Its most vocal supporters embrace an open spirituality among adherents from all religions, promoting the idea that salvation is gained by many paths, even though Christ Himself stated that salvation comes only through Him (John 14:6). Contemplative prayer, as practiced in the modern prayer movement, is in opposition to biblical Christianity and should definitely be avoided.

THE END-TIME BATTLE AGAINST THE MIND.

New Age prophetess and Theosophist, Alice Bailey, said in her books that the next great war would be in the field of **world religions**. She stated that the goals of the so-called new “Christ” included **restructuring Christianity and abolishing Orthodox Judaism**. The precise nature of this planned conflict may be gleaned from Alice Bailey’s writings:

“Years ago I said that the war which may follow this one would be waged in the field of the world religions.” Bailey said, “This war would not be one of external carnage and blood but it would be fought largely with **mental weapons and in the world of thought**; it will involve also the **emotional** realm, according to **idealistic fanaticism**.”

This inherent fanaticism (found in every reactionary group) will fight against the appearance of the coming world religion and the spread of esotericism (occult).

For this struggle, certain of the well-organized churches through their conservative elements (their most powerful elements), are already girding themselves. Fanaticism, entrenched theological positions, and materialistic selfishness will be found actively organized in the churches in all continents and of all denominations.

They can be expected to fight for the established ecclesiastical order, their material profit and their temporal rule, and already are making the needed preparation.

Bailey goes onto say, “The coming struggles will emerge within the churches themselves; it will also be precipitated by:

- The enlightened elements that exist in fair numbers already.
- And are rapidly growing in strength through the impact of human necessity.
- The filth will spread to thinking men and women everywhere who in a protesting revolt have **denied orthodox Christianity and theology**.

Notice the battle plans. The field of battle is in the **mental³⁸ and emotional realm**. In the same book, Alice Bailey states three planned activities of the “New Age Christ,” one of which concludes:

- “The reorganization of the world religions if in any way possible so that their out-of-date theologies,”

³⁸ For additional study, check out the “FutureQuake” and “Nowhere To Run” podcasts on DMT [the spirit-molecule] and pharmakia.

- “Their narrow-minded emphasis and the ridiculous belief that they know what is in the Mind of God may be offset in order that the churches may eventually be the recipients of spiritual inspiration.”
- Bailey is talking about a total restructuring of the Christian faith by changing it from God-centered too self-centered! Paul emphasizes this danger to the Church in his farewell talk to the elders of the Ephesians Church (Acts 20:17-35). The Church today desperately needs to recognize this danger as the crisis we face.

“For I know this,” Paul declares, “that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you not sparing the flock. Also, of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things to draw away disciples after them.” (verses 29-30).



The great deception is springing from the tares growing along a side the wheat in the Church. When wheat grows, the tares are indistinguishable until before the bloom. One has to be knowledgeable to discern the difference. The Holy Spirit will lead us into all truth if we are yielded to Him and His Word!

Heresy is a serious thing, and nothing but a humble walk with God by His Word can keep us in His grace and in harmony with our true brethren. A new Wind and Fresh Light from God's Holy Spirit is therefore an important necessity. This He gives us daily as new situations arise.

The (forces) demons of the pit have gone forth to deceive the whole world (Revelation 12:12). The consequence is that great upheavals are happening in the political and religious world. We must take account of these happenings, as they vitally affect the Church of Christ.

Part 6: Charismatic Witchcraft

To be awake and alert ...

Even as children of God, we must realize that we CAN BE deceived by:

- Being controlled by fear and intimidation – witchcraft.
- Continued anger and frustration that influence the mood and attitude of all the other members of family – witchcraft.
- Positive thoughts and control of the mind, meditation and the forcing of your will over the will of another – witchcraft.
- To bind people (lock them in the spiritual and/or physical realm) and force them to repent – witchcraft.
- To pray that someone else's will must correspond with your own – witchcraft.
- To bind someone else's will and force and/or manipulate them in the spirit – witchcraft.

What is charismatic witchcraft and how does it manifest?

Charismatic witchcraft is any person who endeavors to use the Word of God and His Power with the aim of influencing others to achieve his own selfish purposes – it is the abuse of spiritual and/or soul power to manipulate and control others³⁹.

Charismatic witchcraft uses the works of the flesh and false spirituality to achieve influence and control over others.

2 Corinthians 11:20 *"20 For you endure it if a man assumes control of your souls and makes slaves of you, or devours [your substance, spends your money] and preys upon you, or deceives and takes advantage of you, or is arrogant and puts on airs, or strikes you in the face."*

The Twentieth Century New Translation:

2 Corinthians 11:20 "You tolerate a man even when he enslaves you, when he plunders you, when he gets you into his power, when he puts on airs of superiority, when he strikes you in the face!"



³⁹ In the Scriptures, "charismatic witchcraft" can be described as "selfish ambition".

How many leaders of cults influence their supporters to sell all their possessions and then appropriate it for themselves?

A person can manipulate and control others by a fleshly power – this is witchcraft. It is the case when one person manipulates another and often controls by evil works (influencing) of the flesh (Galatians 5:19-21).

REMEMBER: When you receive a prophetic word you have to TEST the word and have it confirmed by two or three witnesses. If a leader says to you: “Don’t question me! I am the leader here and you listen to me and do as I say!” then you know you must rather leave. You should have the liberty to ask the leader questions when you don’t understand things he has said. Remember, even Ezekiel questioned God!

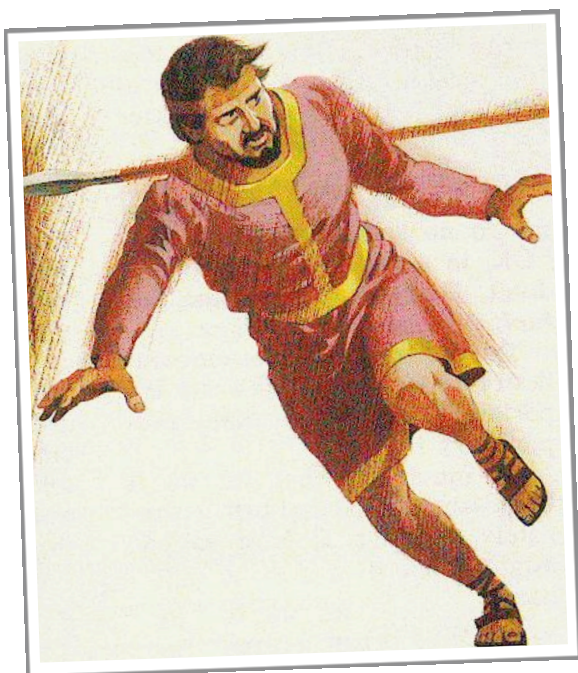
- **Fear and insecurity ...**

If leaders are struggling with fear and insecurity, they can use Charismatic witchcraft to get people to follow them ONLY. They will want to protect their kingdom and will use manipulation and fear to make sure the people stay with them and not go elsewhere.

If God really has appointed you and you have true spiritual authority, you don’t have to protect anything!

If you are afraid of your leader because he has laid down very strict rules of do’s and don’ts because of his own insecurities, then you are under the influence of charismatic witchcraft.

- **Saul and David ...**



Look at the life of Saul: He was insecure and he allowed the fear of man to dominate him. He then ended up in the house of a witch. He hated David who so loved the Lord with all his heart!

Even after David was anointed as king, he waited until God promoted him! He never tried to take Saul off his throne.

Let us learn a very powerful lesson: Never push or kick doors down to open up ways for yourself to be promoted or appointed in ministry! Wait until God placed you in your appointed position of leadership. Even if you have received a prophetic word about going overseas, etc, you wait for God to open the doors. If God has given you the calling, He will protect it for you.

- Classical witchcraft/sorcery (pharmakia).

Webster defines sorcery as “witchcraft or the use of drugs and magic chants”. Sorcery often goes hand in hand with an appeal to evil occult powers (demons and evil spirits). Sorcery also means: “an irresistible influence or manipulation”. It is where one person manipulates another. It makes use of fleshly evil powers such as lust, hatred, fear and strife that come out of the heart of man to influence or manipulate others. The presence of these powers can in fact be felt – such as spiritual daggers, heaviness, a feeling of helplessness and being ruled over, oppression and no boldness to pray.

If evil workers of satan fight against us, we must rise up in spiritual warfare, bind the demons, and command them to go.

- Charismatic witchcraft.

This is where CHRISTIANS rise up against one another and speak against one another. The forces that now come against you are even WORSE than when a satanic coven comes against you! This is what is called “spirit-soul power” and it gets projected onto the other person/family, organization, ministry, and so forth – in the Name of Messiah!

Fleshly powers can be sensed by all, even young children and animals. Powers of lust, adultery and evil thoughts and imagination can manipulate and seduce a person. By means of the mind (thoughts/soul), the works and powers of the flesh (that are sinful and independent) are released. Thoughts can be projected and cause ties in the spiritual realm. We are thus commanded to:

*Ephesians 4:22-24 “22 Strip yourselves of your former nature [put off and discard your old unrenewed self] which **characterized your previous manner of life and becomes corrupt through lusts and desires that spring from delusion**; 23 And be constantly renewed in the spirit of your mind [having a fresh mental and spiritual attitude], 24 And put on the new nature (the regenerate self) created in God’s image, [Godlike] in true righteousness and holiness.”*

What are the “works of the flesh”? Galatians 5:19-21: adultery, fornication, uncleanness, licentiousness, idolatry, sorcery, hatred, strife, jealousy, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, dissensions, heresies, envy, murders, drunkenness, and revelries.

We can also fall into control and manipulation of another, which boils down to witchcraft. It is not our intention to manipulate another, but in reality this happens when we want to enforce our will upon that of another (through deeds, words, or actions). That is why Y’shua (Jesus) taught His disciples to pray: “Father, Let Your Will be done on earth as it is in Heaven!”

- **Charismatic witchcraft in prayer.**

Selfish, soulish prayers can also be applied to endeavor to put pressure on the mind, will, and emotions of another with the aim to achieve your own desires. A common example of this is in the area of relationships – one must be so careful of prophecies and/or words of knowledge regarding marriage partners and relationships!

Charismatic witchcraft can also happen when parents/spouses want their loved ones to fulfill their dreams – to do that which they could not achieve in their own lifetime. The person gets placed into a MOLD, which the parent/spouse is shaping and molding. This MOLD will need to be broken over your life because it will be restricting you from the fullness of what GOD has for you!

If you have been controlling and manipulating your loved ones, its time to let them go and allow them to become what God wants them to be!



PRAY: Father, forgive me for my selfish and self-centered ways!

Charismatic witchcraft also happens where a decision has been made already and confirmation for one's own desires are sought ... in the imagination the prayer has already been answered – you have made up your mind! (I want a new house, car, job, marriage partner and so forth). Spirits of deception can then organize circumstances in such a manner that it seems as if the prayer has been answered.

Through deception and manipulations, the soul of one person reaches out to that of another person to form a soul tie and to enslave the person. When you allow your own desires and will to rule over the Will of God, you open yourself up to a spirit of deception that will control your will and emotions. You are totally deceived and unaware that your prayers have become charismatic witchcraft.

Our prayers should always be directed to bless people and not to curse them. Don't use your authority as a Christian to curse and manipulate other people. You may even be of the opinion that your pastor or minister is outside the Will of God and does not fulfill his task properly. No matter the case, it is very dangerous to pray into a situation and not to ask that God's Will would take place ... as well as undermining the person's authority by gossiping and word curses. It boils down to witchcraft and rebellion!

- **False prophets.**

Many false prophets start out as true prophets of God. What happens? They compromised the Word of God and started depending on their own personal charisma instead of allowing the Holy Spirit to minister. They gradually became more and more deceived and eventually prophesied their own thoughts and desires. In this manner God's gifts are abused and used to people's own advantage.

Be careful of prophecies telling you whom to marry and where to move, or what the sex of the child will be. Be careful of prophetic utterances that inflate the egos of people and cause them to become proud.

*Jeremiah 23:16 "16 Thus says the Lord of hosts: **Do not listen to the words of the [false] prophets who prophesy to you.** They teach you vanity (emptiness, falsity, and futility) and fill you with vain hopes; they speak a vision of their own minds and **not from the mouth of the Lord.**"*

*Revelation 19:10 "10 Then I fell prostrate at his feet to worship (to pay divine honors) to him, but he [restrained me] and said, Refrain! [You must not do that!] I am [only] another servant with you and your brethren who have [accepted and hold] the testimony borne by Jesus. Worship God! **For the substance (essence) of the Truth revealed by Jesus is the Spirit of all prophecy** [the vital breath, the inspiration of all inspired preaching and interpretation of the divine will and purpose, including both mine and yours]."*

All prophecy should glorify God!

*Ezekiel 13:6 "6 They have **seen falsehood and lying divination**, saying, The Lord says; but the Lord has not sent them. Yet they have hoped and made men to hope for the confirmation of their word."*

- **Dangers when seeking a prophetic⁴⁰ word.**

Many people attend prophetic ministries in the hope of receiving a Word from God. People who continuously seek out a prophetic word can actually fall into fortune-telling and divination and come under the influence of evil spirits.

Do not try to "tap" into the prophet's anointing – that will cause you to draw from the prophet's soul/psychic power when you focus on the MAN and not God. To hear what you want to hear – wanting the prophet to give you a word in front of all the people to prove to everyone that God has called you and you have such a very special and anointed calling – is can be DANGEROUS! The prophet has to stay focused on the Holy Spirit and only speak what He says! You should be praying for the prophet to hear clearly from the Throne Room of God! There is a time and season to enquire from a prophet for direction, but Christians have to come into the habit of personally enquiring from God.

⁴⁰ Recommended reading: "Communion With God" by Mark Virkler

- Idols in our hearts.

Ezekiel 14:3-10 “3 Son of man, these men have **set up their idols in their hearts and put the stumbling block of their iniquity and guilt before their faces**; should I permit Myself to be inquired of at all by them? 4 Therefore speak to them and say to them, Thus says the Lord God: Every man of the house of Israel who takes his **idols** [of self-will and unsubmitiveness] into his **heart** and puts the **stumbling block of his iniquity** [idols of silver and gold] before his face, and yet comes to the prophet [to inquire of him], I the Lord will answer him, answer him according to the multitude of his idols, 5 That I may lay hold of the house of Israel in the **thoughts of their own mind and heart**, because they are all estranged from **Me through their idols**. 6 Therefore say to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord God: Repent and turn away from your idols, and turn away your faces from all your abominations. 7 For anyone of the house of Israel or of the strangers who sojourn in Israel who separates himself from Me, **taking his idols into his heart and putting the stumbling block of his iniquity and guilt before his face**, and [yet] comes to the prophet to inquire for himself of Me, I the Lord will answer him Myself! 8 And I will **set My face against that** [false worshiper] and will make him a sign and a byword, and I will cut him off from the midst of My people; and you shall know (understand and realize) that I am the Lord. 9 [The prophet has not been granted permission to give an answer to the hypocritical inquirer] but if the prophet does give the man the answer he desires [thus allowing himself to be a party to the inquirer’s sin], **I the Lord will see to it that the prophet is deceived in his answer**, and I will stretch out My hand against him and will destroy him from the midst of My people Israel. 10 And they **both shall bear the punishment of their iniquity**: the iniquity of the [presumptuous] prophet shall be the same as the iniquity of the [hypocritical] inquirer,”



I Love Myself

God HATES idolatry! What is the result of idols in your heart/life? When you have already made up your mind – you want that house, that girl, that job, whatever – that is an IDOL! God will then put a word in the mouth of the prophet to deceive you! You hear what you want to hear ... but leanness, disease, and death enters in!

*Psalm 106:13-15 “13 But they hastily forgot His works; **they did not [earnestly] wait for His plans [to develop] regarding them,** 14 But lusted exceedingly in the wilderness and tempted and tried to restrain God [with their insistent desires] in the desert. 15 And He gave them their request, **but sent leanness into their souls and [thinned their numbers by] disease and death.**”*

- **The Jezebel spirit⁴¹:**



If I have been hurt and disappointed in life, and I have allowed rebellion to take root in my heart, I will NOT submit to any rulership placed over me! If I have unsubmitiveness in my heart, this will open me up to IDOLATRY – self-will – which then gives the spirit of Jezebel an open door to operate through me.

*Revelation 17:4-Revelation 17:4-5 “4 The **woman** was robed in purple and scarlet and bedecked with gold, precious stones, and pearls, [and she was] holding in her hand a **golden cup full of the accursed offenses and the filth of her lewdness and vice.** 5 And on her forehead there was inscribed a name of mystery [with a secret symbolic meaning]: **Babylon** the great, the mother of prostitutes (idolatresses) and of the filth and atrocities and **abominations of the earth.**”*

• Manipulate – weapons of guilt and fear.

◦ “I’ll trick you into doing things my way”.

- Dominate – fight for control.
 - “I’ll make you to do things my way”.
- Intimidate – fear rules!
 - “I’ll scare you to do things my way!”

How to walk free ...

The KEY is to make a definite decision to live a Spirit-controlled life and develop the Fruits of the Spirit, in which the works of the flesh are annulled. When walking in the flesh, other people in the flesh may manipulate and control you. Honestly, we do not always stay in the Spirit – we are vulnerable to manipulation and control by lustful passions of others – but this must be our aim!

⁴¹ For additional study, please see our books on Jezebel – “21 Jezebelic Footprints”; “Jezebel And Ahab”; “Overcoming Jezebel, Athaliah, And Belial In The Heavenlies”; “Understanding Jezebel And Other Principalities”.

Steps to spiritual maturity.

1. Make a definite decision to live a Spirit-controlled life in which the works of the flesh are annulled. Search your own heart and motivations carefully and turn away and ask forgiveness of all witchcraft, manipulation and unlawful control you have exercised over others. Remember, you will reap what you have sown.
2. Stand fast on the Promises of God that witchcraft has no power over you when you are in Messiah, and Messiah is in you.
3. Resist the power (works) of the flesh by the Power of the Holy Spirit.

*Romans 12:14 "14 Bless those who persecute you [who are cruel in their attitude toward you]; **bless and do not curse them.**"*

Do not fight them at their level – you will lose spiritually! Fight on the level of Messiah Y'shua [Jesus Christ] and God will win!

Prayer ...

Father, I exalt Your Name and praise You that nothing is too difficult for You. I thank You that even if my beloved is being manipulated, controlled or prophetically deceived, You gave us greater POWER to free them. You gave us the Name of Y'shua [Jesus], the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus], the weapons of spiritual warfare which are mighty through Y'shua [Jesus] to the pulling down of strongholds and everything that exalts itself against the Name of Y'shua [Jesus].

We lift up our beloved to You, Father, and ask You to destroy every soul power used against them, every spirit of witchcraft that deceives them, every carnal manipulation that would draw them into bondage to lust, strife, hatred or any other works of the flesh. We bind the evil spirits that work against them and we break the bondages and strongholds that they have over that person in the Almighty Name of Y'shua [Jesus]. We cast them down now!

We thank You, Father, that while we see the walls of bondage fall, we will ask the Holy Spirit to convict our beloved of sin, righteousness, and judgment. We ask the Holy Spirit to draw them back to Y'shua [Jesus] so that they will seek Your righteousness. We thank You, Lord, that their hunger for fellowship with those following hard after you will increase now.

We thank You for Your angels that are around them and protect them.

We thank You for the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus] over their minds to protect them against any further influence of these external powers. We apply the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus] over them. We demand in the Name of [Y'shua] Jesus that they will no longer be unlawfully influenced and controlled by any person or thing. We thank You, Lord, that we will see their deliverance, healing and total freedom in the Almighty Name of Y'shua [Jesus]. AMEN!

The religious spirit⁴² ... yielded to Christ.

There is an unclean spirit whose sole purpose is to convince us that he is God. He comes sounding very much like God and plays on our weaknesses and on our sinful thoughts and desires. It is sent to deceive those who have a strong gift of intercession, and it seeks to gain access to our hearts and minds to use our prayers to bring harm to the Body of Christ. One of its goals is to cause our mouths to come into agreement with the realms of darkness.

This demon may present himself as a gift of discernment or even a prophetic revelation. It may begin by flattering you and try and convince you that you are one of the few who really hear God's Voice and speak for Him. It seeks to elevate your opinion of yourself to raise you above those who would be your teachers thereby making you unteachable. These are only a few of the ways this spirit operates.

This demon is known as the religious spirit.

But don't let his name fool you - he is subtle, but destructive. He wants to gain access to your mouth to release hell's destructive powers on the earth. And he seeks to gain access to your heart through any areas of your heart and mind that are not yet yielded to Christ, or any part of your heart that has been hardened by the presence of cold love.

I have seen this spirit deceive many sincere, Godly people and use them to divide and destroy the church. They feel they have been given a "message from God" that others in the Body of Christ are not right spiritually or have "secret sins."

They may have had a disagreement with a church or an individual, but instead of walking in true forgiveness, they become resentful toward them. Instead of praying for them, they begin to pray against them, asking God to bring judgment on them. They may even feel that they "know" what God's judgment against them will be, and pray according to what they feel it should be.

Believing that they are warring against principalities, they war against their brother or sister in the Lord. But in actuality, they are fighting against Christ Himself.

I have heard people say to me that "God" has told them that He is going to destroy such and such a church, ministry or person. But instead of them being genuinely terrified of that happening and praying against it, I have gotten the sense that they would love nothing better than to see that organization or individual destroyed.

⁴² By Victoria Boyson

Without realizing it, these people have come into agreement with the powers of darkness. Instead of standing in the gap for their brother or sister, they view them as being out of God's reach. They have unconsciously put them in the category of the "unredeemable." They may even feel that these people are standing in God's way of really displaying His power in the church, and in an attempt to "help" God, they pray for their removal.

Instead of believing for God's mercy to prevail in their brother's life, they feel that he is not as "spiritual" as he should be, so they determine in their heart that God must want to wipe him out. THIS IS NOT THE HEART OF GOD!

Soulisn prayers ... prayers that are prayed outside of God's Will and in accordance with the selfish desires of our own hearts are called soulisn prayers. And when we pray against others, we cause the powers of darkness to be released on them. This can cause horrific warfare for them. This is witchcraft, and if we dabble in it, we open up our own lives for these destructive spirits to come back on us and wreak havoc in our own lives.

"Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive and you will be forgiven" (Luke 6:37).

"For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you" (Luke 6:38).

It is very dangerous to assume that we know God's Will for others and then pray for that to happen. We may find ourselves fighting against the Will of God for their lives. We should always confirm what we feel we have heard in the spirit with the peace of God. If we do not have peace about the word we have received, if it does not come from a heart full of genuine love for our brother, then we should disregard it.

The religious spirit is the same spirit that drove Paul to persecute the first church. As he harassed a small group called the Nazarenes, he honestly felt that he was working for God. He killed and imprisoned hundreds of the followers of Christ and felt right in doing so. He was convinced in his heart that he was fulfilling the will of God.

Paul was positive that he knew what was right and that these Christians were evil. Furthermore, he believed they must be destroyed and felt commissioned by God to do so.

But when the Lord revealed Himself to Paul on the road to Damascus, He showed Paul that he was not fighting for truth, but for the realms of darkness.

What agony Paul must have experienced when he learned the truth of his actions. He did so much want to fight for God, and yet he found himself fighting against Him. How he must have agonized over his sin; his grief must have been immeasurable. However, Paul repented and turned from being the greatest persecutor of the early church to being its greatest defender.

We too can turn away from praying for God's punishment to come on those we do not approve of, and start praying for God's will and mercy to be evident in their lives. We can be lead by the Spirit of Truth found in God's word that says, "The wisdom that comes from heaven is first of all pure; then peace-loving, considerate, submissive, full of mercy and good fruit, impartial and sincere. Peace makers who sow in peace raise a harvest of righteousness" (James 3:17-18).

It is essential that we all seek to guard our hearts with the love of God because "love covers over a multitude of sins" (1 Pet. 4:8). The Lord has warned us in Mt. 24:12 that the love of many will grow cold because of the increase of lawlessness, "but he who stands firm to the end will be saved"(v. 13). The only way of guarding our hearts is for our hearts to be bound to the Lord. Any places in our hearts that are not yielded to the Lord are areas of vulnerability to the enemy.

We must not pray for others out of a sense of frustration or anger. The greatest and safest prayer we can pray for ourselves and others is "THY will be done!" Not their will or our will, but pray earnestly for God's Will to be accomplished in their life.

God will bless you ... if you feel you have been the victim of soulish prayers or witchcraft you may at times feel a heaviness or an ominous sense of failure. You may have an increase of strife in your relationships, experience confusion or an overwhelming feeling of self-loathing. But take heart, half the battle is knowing what is attacking you.

Like it or not, you will need to pray for those who have prayed against you. Pray that their words against you will be powerless and that they will stop praying out of the will of God. Ask God to bless them with His peace, love and mercy.

Above all else, we must forgive them because they really do not realize what they are doing. They are victims of this unclean spirit as much as we are. "We wrestle not against flesh and blood"(Eph. 6:12), meaning: we do not fight each other, but we "wrestle" Satan and his demons. The enemy is our enemy. And we do not wrestle in the natural, but in the supernatural realm.

Repent of any unforgiveness you may be harboring against them or others and ask God to give you His unconditional love for them. And, if possible, be an encouragement to them - it will be very difficult for them to continue to hate you if you respond to them in love. Note: It may take time for the spiritual atmosphere around you to be cleared of all their prayers, so continue to cover yourself in prayer often.

Finally, be sure to watch how God will bless you through this, because in every trial we face, there is a blessing in it for us if we yield to God. If the enemy has targeted you, be encouraged by it because he must know of something very powerful in your future or he wouldn't bother harassing you.

*Prayer*⁴³ ...

- **Prayer to repent for un-Godly intercession.**

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for all un-Godly prayers uttered, including controlling witchcraft prayers, and prayers birthed out of fear instead of faith.

LORD, would you remove all that evil from my life, my DNA, and would you restore Your Presence and the Power of Your Holy Spirit to my life. LORD please forgive me for misunderstanding the high calling and privilege of intercession.

I repent and renounce for myself and those in my generational line who left their watch and station and did not wait on You. I choose now to be stationed on the rampart, to wait upon You, and to hear what You will say to me. I will wait until I am reproved.

LORD, I choose to write down the vision so future generations can run with it. I choose Your Timing so that the vision will not be delayed.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line, for relying on our own understanding instead of Yours, LORD and for praying our will instead of Your Will.

I repent and renounce LORD, for not relying on Your Living Word and speaking death over my loved ones instead of life which You so richly give. I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for not seeking and praying Your Will and Desires, but our will and desires.

LORD, I repent and renounce for limiting You, God and all that is possible through You. I repent and renounce for not receiving Your Dreams and praying them because they are so big.

Would You release the gift of faith and expectancy in me to know that You are able to do more than I can think or imagine? I choose to receive the dreams and desires that You have given me and believe that all things are possible with You LORD.

I repent and renounce for not acknowledging You, LORD, Your Power, the time of Your visitation and for not knowing You and praying what is on Your Heart. LORD, I desire to know and pray Your Heart and to receive Your Blessings.

I repent and renounce for stepping out of my own realm of authority and fighting battles that You didn't tell me to fight.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for looking at my circumstances and praying from a soulish perspective and a worldly view. LORD, forgive me for being misled and trusting in a system that has failed me because it was not based on truth or relationship with You? You paid the price of my sin in full.

⁴³ Prayer taken from www.aslansplace.com.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for praying prayers of doubt, unbelief, self-righteousness, pride, jealousy, envy, fear, hardheartedness, strife, selfish ambition, judgment and deception. LORD, would You remove **all bitter roots of judgments** that my family line and I came into agreement with. I ask that You remove all ungodly intercession that was based upon these sins.

- **Un-Godly intercession.**

Father, in the Name of Y'shua [Jesus], I ask You to break, shatter, dissolve and destroy, all un-Godly intercession, all un-Godly prayers, all self-righteous prayers, all soulish prayers, unsound mind prayers, for You said to walk in power, love, and a sound mind.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for jealousy, envy and attempting to steal the giftings and callings of others. I repent for shutting the door on the children of God in order to forfeit their destiny. LORD, I admit that these things have interfered with my intimacy with You and my intercession for others. I choose to forgive those who have done this to me in my life. LORD, I now choose to freely give what You have given to me in order that You may rebuke the thief in my life and others. I choose to lay down my life that You may raise it up again.

Father would You remove and cancel the effects of all soulish prayers, un-Godly intercession, prophecies, and declarations that have released curses against me and my family. I now come into agreement with Godly intercession for me and my family. I ask You to forgive them, for they know not what they have done.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for praying controlling manipulative prayers out of selfish motivation for the purpose of controlling others for selfish advantage.

I repent and renounce for my generational line and myself for those who rejected the identity of sonship with You and the Spirit of Adoption and walked according to the futility of their minds. LORD, I receive the Spirit of Adoption crying, "Abba, Father".

I choose to walk and pray by faith and not by sight. I come into agreement that as Your child, I can approach Your Throne by faith in the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus], and I have direct access to You.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for praying striving compulsive prayers from a state of anxiousness and unrest instead of praying from a state of rest by being seated with You in Heavenly places. LORD, I choose to have my eyes focused on the victory that You intend for me to have.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for taking on the yoke of religious, organizational, manmade intercession instead of taking on Your burden of intercession. I ask You to break off all un-Godly yokes and false burdens of intercession from me and my family line.

LORD, I repent for not seeking Your Kingdom first and for not trusting that You know and will fulfill my needs. I receive Your Promise that when I seek Your Kingdom first, all these things are added to me.

LORD, I repent for not asking from You as You have commanded me, so that I may receive from you and my joy can become full

LORD, I repent for not surrendering to the Holy Spirit to make intercession in me according to the mind of the Spirit and the Will of God.

LORD, I repent for not continuing to travail in prayer as Elijah did until Your Purposes have been joyously fulfilled, until heaven gives rain and the earth produces its fruit. LORD, would You establish me as the trees planted by rivers of water which bring forth fruit in season and whatever I do will prosper.

LORD, I repent and renounce for myself and my ancestors for praying faithless prayers. LORD, I repent and renounce on behalf of myself and my ancestors for not praying in faith for You to heal the sick. LORD, I desire to please You by praying in faith that all things are possible to those who believe. I believe You are good and all good and perfect gifts come from You, the Father of Lights.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for any agreement with the enemies trickery or deceptive schemes that caused me to yield my God given authority thus affecting my prayers, decrees, proclamations, and myself. Thank You for bringing the revelation of TRUTH, so I could repent and take back my authority.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for listening to or using flattery causing deception and ruin, and misrepresenting God's Truths in order to control others for my/our own gain.

LORD, I repent and renounce for myself and my ancestors for coming to the altar of incense before being cleansed and before confessing sins, faults and offenses to one another.

I repent and renounce for myself and my ancestors for not seeking You daily, delighting to know Your Ways, but doing as I please on the day of prayer and fasting. I repent and renounce for myself and my ancestors for believing that the outward works of fasting and prayer alone would bring results but having inward strife and dissension resulting in cursing, hitting and exploiting Your children.

LORD, I choose the fast You have chosen – to loose the chains of injustice, the yokes of the oppressed, to feed the hungry, to provide for the homeless, and to clothe the naked. I choose to do right, to seek justice, encourage the oppressed, defend the cause of the fatherless, and plead the case of the widow.

- **Women.**

I repent and renounce for myself and for the women in my generational line who took it upon themselves to act as if they were the Holy Spirit to men. I repent for those women who did not allow men to be the spiritual headship of the marriage, but tried to take on that position.

- **Men.**

I repent and renounce for myself and the men in my generational line for all inconsideration, dishonoring, and not recognizing wives as joint heirs by the grace of God. I choose to live in consideration of my wife and honor her as a joint heir of God's Grace.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for the men in my family line who because of fear and passivity relinquished their responsibility as head. I renounce the influence of the spirit of Jezebel and Ahab on myself and my generational line.

I repent the men who did not know and did not want to know their responsibility for intercession.

- **Prayerlessness.**

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line who did not value intercession and said it was for others and that they did not know how to pray and therefore did not pray. Father, forgive me for prayerlessness.

I repent and renounce for myself and my ancestors for not honoring the Godly priests and priestesses who have prayed Your Heart, God. LORD, pour out the Godly bowls of intercession prayed by the saints before me.

- **Creative arts.**

Break the consequences off my family line of legalistic mocking and restricting of passionate worship and intercession through dance and the arts.

LORD, I choose to enter into Your Courts with praise and to worship You for Who You are in Spirit and in Truth. LORD, I ask forgiveness for not recognizing the creative arts as intercession. I repent for restricting dance, painting, music, and visual arts as a part of worship and intercession to You LORD.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for being narrow minded and not embracing all of You and Your Kingdom. I repent for a narrow view of your Kingdom. I ask you to remove all the limitations that I have perceived or understood and replace them with Your Wisdom, Your Knowledge, Your Understanding, and the FULLNESS of Who You are.

I choose to forgive all those including the Body of Messiah who shut down and limited the creativity in me as a worshipper and an intercessor. I choose to recognize and bless the creative arts in others as the word of God in the anointing of truth.

- **Prayer for governmental leaders.**

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for not praying for leaders and those in authority that You have placed over me. I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for not submitting to governmental authority and praying against the President and other government officials that have been appointed by God.

I repent for using liberty as a cloak for cursing and speaking evil in my prayers against the established government. I repent for not honoring the leaders of my nation. I repent for not praying for and seeking the peace of the city, state, and nation where You have caused me to live.

I break all agreement made to ungodly religious and governmental authorities. LORD, I ask You to break off of me and my family line the consequences of fatherlessness, abandonment, rejection, and allowing a false spirit of Elijah to have power over our intercession and prayers.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for withholding prayers and intercession that would release the sons and daughters of God.

LORD, I ask that You would remove all un-Godly powers, authorities, rulers, elders, devices that have resulted from un-Godly intercession.

- **False prophets.**

I repent for letting false prophets, diviners, and the news media to deceive me and cause me to bring negative prayers to You due to not seeking Your divine insight. I renounce generational terrorism, treason, insurrection and murder.

LORD please remove all judgments against me, my family, and my brothers and sisters in Messiah [Christ] that I have brought upon myself and others through these prayers.

LORD would You go before me as my King with the Breaker Anointing so that I can pass through the gate, breach the womb and break out and burst forth in multiplication and spread in all directions.

- **Fear of man.**

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for praying prayers based on trying to sound or look right, good, or spiritual in front of others rather than approaching prayer as coming into Your Presence and communing with You, LORD.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for believing lies and walking in discouragement, pain, suffering, disappointment, hopelessness, and allowing these circumstances to negatively affect my intercession.

- **Idolatry.**

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for all un-Godly intercession directed to idols, gods, goddesses, objects, heavenly and earthly bodies, and the dead.

Father would You break the consequences of un-Godly intercession that hindered the answer from Your Throne?

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for all ungodly chanting, ritualistic, and repetitive prayers.

LORD, would You remove the curses that were activated and the un-Godly spiritual forces that were empowered by these unrighteous prayers? I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for putting trust in praying formulas to cause a favorable outcome.

Father, would You remove all deception, wrongful motivations and intents from my heart, mind and will that would cause me to pray misguided prayers? Father, would you remove the brass heaven?

Father would You release an open heaven and pour out the bowls of the prayers of the Saints according to Your Will?

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for bowing the knees in prayer to any man, angel, idol, or image rather than You. I repent for not relying on You to strengthen my feeble knees. I repent for confused and complaining prayers during a time when You were chastening me. I acknowledge that Your Desire was to strengthen my feeble knees, but my attitude and prayers hindered me.

LORD forgive me for not exalting You in prayer as the LORD to Whom every knee should bow. I repent for myself and my ancestors for prolonged kneeling, self-abasement, flagellation, and striving in prayers way beyond the leading of Your Holy Spirit, so that we could boast of our prayers. I repent for not strengthening the weak hands and feeble knees of others.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for praying out of a place of disunity with Your Body and for praying out of a heart filled with selfish desires, envy, and jealousy that has caused me to miss the mark.

Forgive me for every time I have been pulled off course either by the enemy or my own unyielded will.

Forgive me for wanting to promote my own self-will rather than You. I repent and renounce all idolatry. I choose to set my face to know You and Your Heart of mercy and compassion and I will pray Your Heart and not my own.

LORD release Your Sound as a war cry in me and others so that we may worship with one accord that will breach the walls, break through the brass heaven, and pierce the canopy that holds back generational blessings.

LORD on behalf of myself and my ancestors, I repent for and renounce everything that has allowed the enemy to steal my prayers. LORD, would You remove all generational curses on intercession?

LORD, would You give me the breakthrough to plunder the enemy's camp and take back the righteous unanswered prayers for myself and for my previous generations?

Father, in Y'shua's [Jesus'] Name I choose to empty myself, my emotions, and my desires and ask You YHVH to fill me with Your Mind, Your Heart, Your will.

LORD I ask You to forgive me and my generational line for not approaching You in true intercession by worshipping You in the totality of Who You are and not perceiving Who You are.

I repent and renounce for myself and my generational line for coming into Your Presence with meaningless offerings, for having evil assemblies, having unclean hands, unrepentant hearts, pride, and for doing wrong.

LORD, I ask that You break off of me the guilt and condemnation that I have not interceded correctly. I choose to forgive myself for this false guilt. LORD, I now receive Your true intercession and I willingly receive any Godly mantles of intercession You choose to give me.

LORD, would You remove all deception off of me and my family?

I repent and renounce for myself and for those in my generational line who squandered talents, gifts, resources and money from the beginning of time to the present.

I declare that I will not lean to my own understanding, but in all my ways I will acknowledge You in intercession.

LORD, I declare that as I sit in the heavenly places with You, I will release Your decrees and they will come into existence.

I declare for my desires to be emptied of my mind, will, and emotions and to be filled with Your Mind, Will, and Emotions.

I declare LORD that I will allow You to teach me how to pray. AMEN!



Part 7: The Will

THE WILL.

Our WILL is one of the most important aspects of who we are – it is the center of our being.

God's Will for us is the BEST, it is PERFECT, and Holy.

Man's will is sovereign, free and independent. Satan's will is polluted, he steals your potential, and he binds you!

"The will of man can be regarded as his true self, because it truly represents him ... our emotions give expression to the way we feel; our intellect tells us only what we think; but our will communicates what we want."⁴⁴

Can you believe it? Man can say NO to God, and God will always respect his choice! God – the Creator of the entire universe – will never overrule your WILL!

*Luke 22:42 "42 Saying, Father, if You are **willing**, remove this cup from Me; yet not My will, but [always] Yours be done.*



Out of our LOVE for the LORD, we WILLINGLY submit to Him and His Ways. God will never force His Will upon us. God the Father did not even force His Will upon His Son – Y'shua [Jesus] chose the Father's Will. Many times your will is against God's Will BUT you can make a choice to repent and submit to do God's Will. Picking up your cross daily is where your will crosses with God's Will, you pick up your cross, and follow the Lord!

⁴⁴ Quote by Watchman Nee

Unlike God the Father, the kingdom of darkness will try in every way possible to bind you and keep you in bondage, that it is very difficult – although not impossible – to WILL to chose and reach out to God.

The potential of the will.

Man will not maintain victory if he does not exercise and activate his will. Satan will always try to hold on to our will. It is our will – empowered by the Holy Spirit – that resists the enemy. As long as we resist him in the area of our will, satan and his kingdom can have no access. With our WILL, we resist the enemy and keep our FREEDOM.

The principle of permission of the WILL.

Nothing concerning man can be achieved without the permission [activation] of his WILL. Satan cannot just put a curse on you or put you in chains. Cults require that you follow them blindly – no questions asked! Everything is prescribed – you are not allowed to use your will.

The highest level of creation is seen in the creation of man:

*Psalm 8:4-5 “4 What is man that You are mindful of him, and the son of [earthborn] man that You care for him? 5 Yet You have made him but a little lower than God [or heavenly beings], and You have **crowned him with glory and honor.**”*

*Psalm 82:6 “6 I said, You are **gods** [since you **judge** on My behalf, as My **representatives**]; indeed, all of you are children of the Most High.”*

In what respect are we like God? The will of man gives him a self-determined strength so that he is able to resist God and establish a kind of sovereignty for himself. The centre of sovereignty is freedom of choice. You choose what you want to think, how you want to live, and so forth. God does not want us to be dominated by anyone – not even Him! God could've used fear to force us to serve Him, but He has given us a choice. He wants that everything we do in our relationship with Him will be because we LOVE Him and we want to do it. God sees that as worthy. Millions choose to resist God and go to hell. When we chose to serve and obey God, He gets glorified. It is so sad to think that millions choose to resist God and go to hell!

Because man has a free will, it makes him a type of “god” on earth. However, he is not religious or divine. Man is:

• A CREATURE OF DOMINION

*Romans 5:17 “17 For if because of one man's trespass (lapse, offense) death reigned through that one, much more surely will those who receive [God's] overflowing grace (unmerited favor) and the free gift of righteousness [putting them into right standing with Himself] **reign as kings in life** through the One Man Jesus Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One).”*

• A CREATURE OF DECISION MAKING

God can do nothing without the will of man. If you make a decision God will confirm you in it. Until you decide, NOTHING will change and you will not experience the provision of God – the Israelites had to choose to leave Egypt. In deliverance you determine what God must help you with. You must submit to God, repent of your involvement in sin, and God sets you free! In the past, we would pray for hours with people, we would repent for their sins and do the deliverance – then God taught us this powerful lesson – each person has to carry his own sins to the cross!

The will of man acts as a protection against every evil work. As long as you choose to live with your circumstances and problems NOTHING will change! Get sick and tired of your circumstances!

How do we open the doors for the enemy? We play in the devil's playground!

Which do you choose?



Ephesians 4:26-27 "26 When angry, do not sin; do not ever let your wrath (your exasperation, your fury or indignation) last until the sun goes down. 27 Leave no [such] room or foothold for the devil [give no opportunity to him]."

PLACE: "topos" (Topic). This is an area, a place, or a surrounding occupied by a person or object (this area can be defined).

*1 John 5:18 "18 We know [absolutely] that anyone born of God does not [deliberately and knowingly] practice committing sin, but the One Who was begotten of God carefully watches over and protects him [Christ's divine presence within him preserves him against the evil], and the wicked one does **not lay hold (get a grip)** on him or touch [him]."*

"Does not lay hold (get a grip)" in Greek is "*haptoma*", meaning to tie, to cling to, and to attach.

We can give the enemy a legal right to attach himself to certain areas of our lives and to influence us – when we open doors to the occult, pornography, ungodly TV viewing, gambling, addiction, and so forth – we are making un-Godly covenants with the enemy.

WARNING! Many times we are not even aware we are playing in the enemy's playground because he has blinded us and kept us ignorant. God is very serious about this! 101 times in the Bible He warns us to stay away from the occult. We can try to be religious and say "I'll just plead the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus] over me and I will be fine!" What ignorance! If I step into satan's territory, the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus] is not there – it is only when I walk in OBEDIENCE to God's Commandments and play in HIS Playground, will I be protected by the Blood of Y'shua [Jesus].

If I CHOOSE to play in satan's playground, he has got me – he now has LEGAL right to put me in bondage.

The principle of the ACTIVE will.

God requires the will of man to be ACTIVE to reach the Will of God. In contrast, satan requires a PASSIVE will to achieve his goals. Note, so much in our society – drugs/medications, music, entertainment, alcohol, and so forth – is designed by the kingdom of darkness to make your will "asleep".

- When man is neutral and refuses to make a decision, God can and will do nothing. Salvation appeals to the will of man, not his emotions.
- Spiritual life begins with a choice – not emotions! It is a DECISION to serve God and to make God's Will your own.
- Spiritual unity takes place when the will of man is united with God's Will. It does not imply that man ceases to exist and that his will does not function or exist any longer, but that he chooses to bring his will in line with the Will of God. We do not stop at the cross; we die to self – BUT the grave is EMPTY! We have to LIVE with Messiah!
- Our DECISIONS confirm God's Will in our lives. When you reach out and embrace God's Will, then God acts.
- Your will is connected to God's Will. Your will NEVER STOPS TO FUNCTION – the choice is always there ... to choose LIFE and God's Ways, or DEATH and the way of satan.
- God does not require of you to relinquish your will and personality. God activates your being in every area – mind, body, consciousness, and spirit – to bring it into FULLNESS.
- God will NEVER exchange His Will with the will of man. He requires intelligent, willing co-operation with His Will.

- Deliverance cannot be maintained without an active will. You are able to resist.
- “Evil spirits ... require an empty brain and a passive will” [Watchman Nee]. A passive will is an open doorway to satan. Satan knows how to work if your will does not.
- Christians are deceived when they want God to make all their decisions. They are afraid of the responsibility of taking decisions that will determine their future direction. (Divorce, new job, throw medicine away, etc.) Therefore they try to find themselves counsellors, leaders, pastors, and/or ministers to make these decisions for them. The final decision is always your own responsibility!

REMEMBER! YOU are ALWAYS responsible for your decisions! You can NEVER escape from that responsibility!



Deception is a result of passivity. Passivity is a will that does not work. It is a pity that it is usually totally committed Christians desiring to do God's Will who are deceived and believe that all circumstances in their lives are directed by God's Will. When you accept every situation to be God's Will, you will never confront something that has been placed on you by satan. We must remember that God's Kingdom is established by CONFRONTATION.

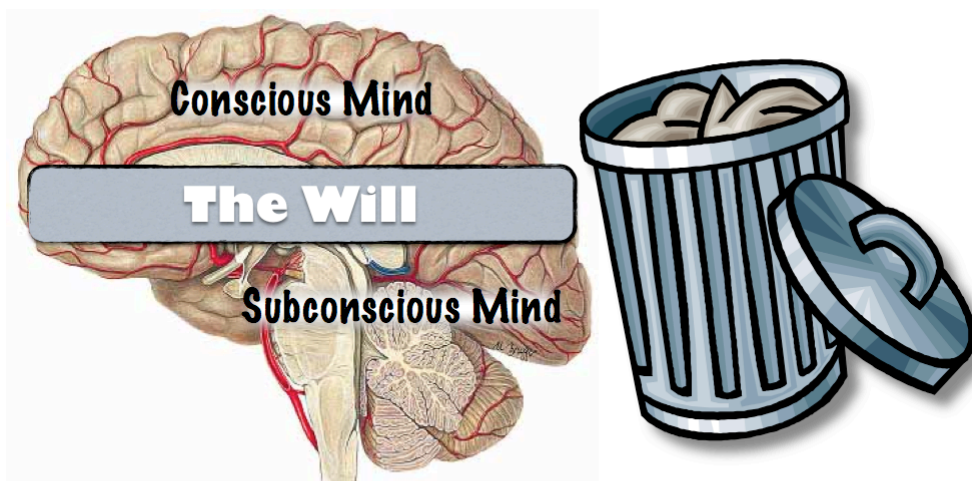
As we have learnt in the previous sessions, deception can develop when:

- There are idols in our hearts – “I've made up my mind what I want!” (Ezekiel 14).
- There is hate, bitterness, and unforgiveness.

1 John 2:9-11 "9 Whoever says he is in the Light and [yet] hates his brother [Christian, born-again child of God his Father] is in darkness even until now. 10 **Whoever loves his brother [believer] abides (lives) in the Light**, and in It or in him there is no occasion for stumbling or cause for error or sin. 11 But he who hates (detests, despises) his brother [in Christ] is in darkness and walking (living) in the dark; he is straying and does not perceive or know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes."

The principle of the discerning will.

The will is that which stands between good and evil. When the will is submitted to God's Will, this results in SHALOM [harmony] between God and man ... and the POWER of God is released for total deliverance. Like Israel, we make the step to possess and enter the land – to slay the giants – and God promises the VICTORY!



The unrenewed-subconscious mind is like the rubbish in the bin ... the WILL is the LID!

How much do you remember?

If you have suffered serious traumas in your life, then the brain is so designed by God to block out the bad memories. It is important that you try to remember the memories of your past life – how much do you remember?

If your brain has blocked out a certain time-period of your life and you can't remember what happened, you need to ask the Lord what happened in your past – that you give HIM permission to open up that area and to show you what happened – you break the demonic seal placed over that time-period of your life – you break the time-clock of satan where he is keeping you bound emotionally tied to that time-period. God will shine His Light of Truth and revelation in your sub-conscious mind and your spirit to show you what happened. YOU MUST GIVE PERMISSION TO GOD TO SHOW YOU!

For healing to take place I must remember and I must be connected to the emotions involved even if the trauma took place many years ago!

- The will is a sensor for all thoughts that enter from the subconscious mind into the conscious mind.
- Our subconscious is a reservoir for all bad experiences from our past. The enemy uses the subconscious to project thoughts into our conscious mind.
- The will receives or rejects these thoughts. We must resist the oppressions and fears of the subconscious with our will – we must ask that the LORD's Light of Truth come to expel the darkness of our pain and lies.
- It takes a lot of energy from the will, and even physical energy, to suppress the welling up of emotions from the subconscious that come up against the will. Deep emotional upheavals or problems that push upward will weaken the will – this could make you always feel tired⁴⁵.

For example: anger, depression, suicidal thoughts, and so forth. Shock therapy will not take it away! Tablets, alcohol, drugs, etc, will not take it away!

- When the will does not resist satan in a specific area anymore, he takes control. For example: phobias, like fear of water, heights, panic attacks, and so forth. When you can't resist anymore, you then give in to addictions, compulsive behaviors, eating disorders, migraine headaches, and other bondages. LIGHTS FLASHING ON THE DASHBOARD! Your emotions can be likened to the lights on the dashboard of your car. If one starts to flash you can either choose to smash it with a hammer! Or you can see what the problem is and FIX it!

THE ANSWER! POSSESS THE LAND!

- Renewal of the mind strengthens the will and loosens the bondages. It is also very important to receive healing from emotional pain and experiential-lies (Romans 12:2).
- To live under stress for long periods of time leads to passivity – you become so tired that you do not want to exercise your will anymore. “BURN-OUT” – prolonged ministry or exhaustion.
- Tremendous trauma during childhood causes the mind to suppress or dissociate. The will tries to keep the memories in the subconscious mind. When the person reaches the age of thirty years or older, the will is tired of fighting and emotional outbursts or depression.



⁴⁵ Headaches can result from inner conflict and/or trying to suppress pain.

Passivity of the will.

Basic principles of discernment:

- “God wants the believer to work with Him by exercising his will and employing all his abilities so that he can be filled with the Holy Spirit.
- To simplify his endeavors, the evil spirit requires that the believer has to be passive in his will and to renounce the use of some or all of his abilities.”⁴⁶

Symptoms of passivity:

- Apathy – waits for a power outside himself to move him – no self-motivation.
- Many unfinished tasks – God requires endurance, it means to complete what you have started. A passive person will be quick to respond, but cannot carry it through. Attracted and distracted. To persevere comes through a will that is working!
- Not able to concentrate – concentration is part of endurance. Of necessity you have to think things through and carry things through in order for work to be completed.
- Not able to make decisions or take initiative – afraid of making choices, wants others to be responsible for their decisions.
- Always in fear and doubt – controlled by circumstances. People with deep emotional problems experience difficulty in this area.



You will NEVER come out of a deep problem unless you decide that you want to! You must **ACTIVATE** your will!

- Double-mindedness, unstable – a passive person makes a decision and then withdraws, afraid that he has made the wrong choice. Never knows if he is in or out of God's Will. The minute you experience resistance, you think you have missed God.
- Physical laziness, mechanical actions – what happens to you spiritually, affects you physically – homes are a mess, poor personal hygiene, garden around home is unkept, and so forth.
- Burn-out, stress, exhaustion – beware of:
 - Competitiveness/rivalry – must always overwork.
 - Wrong priorities – work before family.
- Emotionally withdrawn from people. Easily irritated.
- Physical symptoms: backache, stomach ulcers, headaches.
- Relationship with God suffers as a result.

⁴⁶ Quote by Watchman Nee

- Begin to postpone things – so many problems that you postpone things until there are so many that they overwhelm you. You will not be able to compete; you will avoid decisions and responsibilities and will be overwhelmed by passivity.

Satan has a way of burying us under our problems. We need to face the mountain ... not hide from it.

causes for passivity:

- Overwork and/or exhaustion.
- Extended ministry.
- Domineering parent, spouse, and/or friend who makes all your decisions. You are never allowed to make choices and take responsibility.
- Illness and breakdown.
- No resistance – headaches, oppression.
- Deception- for example when you believe God wants you sick.
- Emotional pain, trauma, unhappiness.
- You get to a place where you don't care anymore – where you don't fight back. You just accept what happens to you – you think you deserve it – you don't fight back.

Bondages over the will:

Deception occurs where people want to “walk in the Spirit”. It does not mean that you are becoming passive. It is to receive Godly guidance through your spirit, convey it to your mind, and then your will comes into action. It does not mean that you switch your mind off and allow God to “switch in”. Spiritual does not equal mystical. The will of man is bound by deception – through incorrect interpretation of the Word.

• **“CHRIST LIVES IN ME”**

*Galatians 2:20 “20 I have been crucified with Christ [in Him I have shared His crucifixion]; it is no longer I who live, but Christ (the Messiah) lives in me; and the **life I now live in the body I live by faith** in (by adherence to and reliance on and complete trust in) the Son of God, Who loved me and gave Himself up for me.”*

- Wrong concept – I do not live at all.
- **Truth – I LIVE by faith in the Son of God. You must never give up living, otherwise your will stops functioning.**
- Principle – God does not require self-destruction so that His life can be manifested. Enjoy what God has given us in His wonderful world!

• “I HAVE BEEN CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST”

Galatians 2:20 “20 I have been crucified with Christ [in Him I have shared His crucifixion]; it is no longer I who live, but Christ (the Messiah) lives in me; and the life I now live in the body I live by faith in (by adherence to and reliance on and complete trust in) the Son of God, Who loved me and gave Himself up for me.”

- Wrong concept – I am dead and must practice being dead.
- **Truth – I have died with Christ and am resurrected by His life TO LIVE.**
- Principle – God’s plan for believers is LIFE not death.

• “GOD WORKS IN ME”

Philippians 2:13 “13 [Not in your own strength] for it is God Who is all the while effectually at work in you [energizing and creating in you the power and desire], both to will and to work for His good pleasure and satisfaction and delight.”

- Wrong concept – I do nothing but to surrender and then God will do both the willing and working for me.
- **Truth – I can DO ALL things by the power of Christ in me. God does not want to make a robot of you.**
 - You will always have to do both the willing and working. You are responsible and you must use your will in order to make decisions.
- Principle – God will never push the will of man aside. God never requires of man to stop his activities before He is able to work.



• “IN EVERYTHING GIVE THANKS”

1 Thessalonians 5:18 “18 Thank [God] in everything [no matter what the circumstances may be, be thankful and give thanks], for this is the will of God for you [who are] in Christ Jesus [the Revealer and Mediator of that will].”

- Wrong concept – I accept all circumstances as the Will of God.
- **Truth – I will submit myself to God (not circumstances) IN all circumstances.**
- Principle – Submission to God and resisting the evil one must function together (James 4:7).

• “YOUR WILL BE DONE”

Matthew 6:10 “10 Your kingdom come, Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven.”

- Wrong concept – God chooses for me so that I do not have to decide.
- **Truth – I choose to do His Will (John 7:17; 15:7). When you choose God’s Will, then it brings God’s Provision forth for that situation.**
- Principle – God will never substitute the will of man with His Will.

We always have a CHOICE!

This is a spiritual principle – a spiritual follower of Messiah Y’shua [Jesus] is someone who is at liberty to exercise his will. You have a choice:

• *Law:*

*Deuteronomy 30:19 “19 I call heaven and earth to witness this day against you that I have set before you **life and death, the blessings and the curses**; therefore choose life, that you and your descendants may live”*

*Joshua 24:15 “15 And if it seems evil to you to serve the Lord, **choose for yourselves** this day whom you will serve, whether the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the River, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land you dwell; but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord.”*

• *Prophets:*

*1 Kings 18:21 “21 Elijah came near to all the people and said, How long will you halt and limp between **two opinions**? If the Lord is God, follow Him! But if Baal, then follow him. And the people did not answer him a word.”*

• *The flesh or the Spirit:*

*Romans 8:5 “5 For those who are according to the flesh and are **controlled by its unholy desires set their minds on and pursue those things which gratify the flesh**, but those who are according to the **Spirit** and are controlled by the **desires of the Spirit** set their minds on and seek those things which gratify the [Holy] Spirit.”*

Expose deception by means of the TRUTH! Those who arrive at a place where their will does not function any longer are confused and also deceived.

- Be willing to admit the Truth concerning yourself. Be teachable.
- Recognize areas of deception. Ask God to remind you where you opened demonic doors.
- Discover where you have given the enemy a foothold (the occult checklist at the back of this manual will help you).

Break PASSIVITY by activating the will!



•The will is a God-given ability and must function.

•The will is activated by reacting to God's Will. The Will of God will not allow you to be lazy and passive ... “Do you want to be healed?”

*Jeremiah 29:4-14 “4 Thus says the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, to all the captives whom I have caused to be carried into exile from Jerusalem to Babylon: 5 Build yourselves houses and dwell in them; plant gardens and eat the fruit of them. 6 Take wives and have sons and daughters; take wives for your sons and give your daughters in marriage, that they may bear sons and daughters; multiply there, and do not be diminished. 7 **And seek (inquire for, require, and request) the peace and welfare of the city to which I have caused you to be carried away captive; and pray to the Lord for it, for in the welfare of [the city in which you live] you will have welfare.** 8 For thus says the*

Lord of hosts, the God of Israel: Let not your [false] prophets and your diviners who are in your midst deceive you; pay no attention and attach no significance to your dreams which you dream or to theirs, 9 For they prophesy falsely to you in My name. I have not sent them, says the Lord.”

"10 For thus says the Lord, When seventy years are completed for Babylon, I will visit you and keep My good promise to you, causing you to return to this place. 11 For I know the thoughts and plans that I have for you, says the Lord, thoughts and plans for welfare and peace and not for evil, to give you hope in your final outcome. 12 Then you will call upon Me, and you will come and pray to Me, and I will hear and heed you. 13 Then you will seek Me, inquire for, and require Me [as a vital necessity] and find Me when you search for Me with all your heart. [Deut. 4:29-30.] 14 I will be found by you, says the Lord, and I will release you from captivity and gather you from all the nations and all the places to which I have driven you, says the Lord, and I will bring you back to the place from which I caused you to be carried away captive."

- The will is motivated by faith. Faith is ALWAYS active. Remember the account of Y'shua [Jesus] in the storm – He STOOD up and rebuked the storm!
- The will is strengthened by Truth.

EXERCISE the will by making decisions.

- A passive person is not able to make his own decisions. Start with small things – Tea or coffee?
- Make a list of what you like and don't like – you must learn that you can make your own opinions.
- Stop putting things off.
- Make a decision and see it through. Break double-mindedness.
- Be prepared to make wrong decisions. Accept the responsibility of making decisions.
- Stop allowing circumstances to control you – stop the thinking of "what will be, will be".
- Some prefer to be driven by circumstances rather than to make a decision.
 - God's Will never depends on circumstances. If you are controlled by circumstances, you lose direction in your life.
 - Passivity presumes that God decides everything for you.

RESIST the devil! Pray a violent prayer every day!

- Passive people do not like to fight, but if you are not in control, then satan is.
- Man has to rule over his own spirit, mind, body, and emotions. He rules by means of his will.
- Resist the dominion of the enemy and regain all lost territory.
- Work together with God for the use of every area of your life as a person.

The will in control of the spirit, mind, and body guarantees FREEDOM!

- The spirit requires the control of the will.

*Proverbs 25:28 “28 **He who has no rule over his own spirit** is like a city that is broken down and without walls. [Prov. 16:32.]”*

- The mind must be subject to the will – Colossians 3:2; 2 Corinthians 10:5.
- The body must be the instrument of man – 1 Corinthians 9:27.
- The peak of a Christian’s walk, is self-control – Galatians 5:23.

Stability of the will.

- We must be stable and moved only by the Will of God.

*Psalm 131:2 “2 **Surely I have calmed and quieted my soul**; like a weaned child with his mother, like a weaned child is my soul within me [ceased from fretting].”*

- An active will is necessary to maintain your deliverance in any area of your life. Set your boundaries⁴⁷.

Summary:

- The capacity to rule and to have ownership comes from the will of man. Satan wants to take away man’s God given ability to rule.
- Man has to rule over his own life.
- Do not submit yourself to circumstances.
- Submit to God IN all circumstances.
- Take up your cross up daily. (Your cross is where your will and God’s Will meet).



*Luke 9:23 “23 And He said to all, If any person wills to come after Me, **let him deny himself** [disown himself, forget, lose sight of himself and his own interests, refuse and give up himself] and **take up his cross daily and follow Me** [cleave steadfastly to Me, conform wholly to My example in living and, if need be, in dying also].”*

⁴⁷ For additional study, see our books “*Godly Limits In Relationships*” and “*Godly Limits With Children*”, available from the website or for order from the office.

The freedom of the will.

God has gone to infinite trouble to liberate us, because:

- God is Love, it is His Nature and our relationship with Him is based on love and trust. Nothing I do will change His mind.
- For love and trust to exist, there has to be a free choice of a free will. Man can freely reject or freely accept God – only then is true love possible.
- Of all God's Creatures, man is the only one who is able to exercise choices. Animals do make choices, but based on behavioral patterns (instinct).
- Man is created in God's Image, which means that man is also creative. He chooses his own goals.
- An animal can be taught by conditioning, but man makes moral choices based on truths and standards of right or wrong. For example, a parrot cannot lie, a dog cannot steal. The will is the final step in the process of human behavior.
- An illustration of the whole process of behavior can be likened to terms of a motor car:
 - The mind is the steering-wheel, which gives direction.
 - The emotions are the engine, which gives motivation.
 - The will is the clutch, which makes choices.
 - All three must function in harmony in order to produce effective behavior.
 - A decision to do something without much motivation, will not achieve much. Exaggerated emotional motivation – such as fear and anxiety – overwhelms the mind that has to think rationally and the result is panic. This is like accelerating without hands on the steering wheel!
 - A person who is very enthusiastic about a certain idea, but does not do much about it, is like someone learning to drive. The car is making a noise, the steering wheel is in both hands, but the gears are in neutral.

Mark 12:30 "And you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind, and with all your strength."

	Mind only:	Emotions only:	Will only:
Salvation	Change opinion.	Regret.	Reforming.
Faith	Conviction.	Impulse.	Determination.
Love	Admiration.	Sentiment.	Charity.

A free will does not mean freedom. Freedom can only be expressed within the confines of what the law determines, in other words, obedience. Any law that is trespassed turns against me.

The liberation of the Will.

The battle between God and satan has nothing to do with POWER. There is no question of competition ... God can at any time totally eliminate satan without lifting a finger. The conflict is in the spirit realm ... is it God or satan who will win the will of man?

The only reaction God seeks of man is nothing less than LOVE.

Satan, though, uses deception, pressure, perversity and anything else that will be to his advantage. Anything except freedom of choice ... that he dares not risk.

The Line of Authority

Satan		God
Law of sin & death		Law of God
Adam		Messiah, the Last Adam
“Old” flesh man		New man, spiritman
Spirit – darkened		Spirit - Light
Soul – sin		Soul - Righteous
Body – disease		Body - Healed



**The WILL
must
choose!**

Two value systems inside ...

Inside of you, every day, you ALWAYS have the potential to sin!! You are not immune from sin. You have to make a choice every second of the day – who will you serve! You have to crucify the old man and LIVE in the Spirit! This makes me VERY dependent upon GOD and not on my own strength and myself. When you think you are standing, be careful you do not fall! It is by God's GRACE ONLY that you will make the right choice to stand against the enemy!

Romans 6:16 “16 Do you not know that **if you continually surrender yourselves to anyone to do his will**, you are the slaves of him whom you obey, whether that be to sin, which leads to death, **or to obedience which leads to righteousness (right doing and right standing with God)?**”

Galatians 5:17 “17 **For the desires of the flesh are opposed to the [Holy] Spirit**, and the [desires of the] Spirit are opposed to the flesh (godless human nature); for these are antagonistic to each other [continually withstanding and in conflict with each other], **so that you are not free but are prevented from doing what you desire to do.**”



Old Man:	New Man:
Galatians 5:19-21 “19 Now the doings (practices) of the flesh are clear (obvious): they are immorality, impurity, indecency, 20 Idolatry, sorcery, enmity, strife, jealousy, anger (ill temper), selfishness, divisions (dissensions), party spirit (factions, sects with peculiar opinions, heresies), 21 Envy, drunkenness, carousing, and the like. I warn you beforehand, just as I did previously, that those who do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.”	Galatians 5:22-23 “22 But the fruit of the [Holy] Spirit [the work which His presence within accomplishes] is love, joy (gladness), peace, patience (an even temper, forbearance), kindness, goodness (benevolence), faithfulness, 23 Gentleness (meekness, humility), self-control (self-restraint, continence). Against such things there is no law [that can bring a charge].”

Mark 7:21-23 “21 For from within, [that is] out of the hearts of men, come base and wicked thoughts, sexual immorality, stealing, murder, adultery, 22 Coveting (a greedy desire to have more wealth), dangerous and destructive wickedness, deceit; unrestrained (indecent) conduct; an evil eye (envy), slander (evil speaking, malicious misrepresentation, abusiveness), pride (the sin of an uplifted heart against God and man), foolishness (folly, lack of sense, recklessness, thoughtlessness). 23 All these evil [purposes and desires] come from within, and they make the man unclean and render him unhallowed.”	Romans 6:6, 11-12 “6 We know that our old (unrenewed) self was nailed to the cross with Him in order that [our] body [which is the instrument] of sin might be made ineffective and inactive for evil, that we might no longer be the slaves of sin. 11 Even so consider yourselves also dead to sin and your relation to it broken, but alive to God [living in unbroken fellowship with Him] in Christ Jesus. 12 Let not sin therefore rule as king in your mortal (short-lived, perishable) bodies, to make you yield to its cravings and be subject to its lusts and evil passions.”
1 Corinthians 6:9-10 “9 Do you not know that the unrighteous and the wrongdoers will not inherit or have any share in the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived (misled): neither the impure and immoral, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor those who participate in homosexuality, 10 Nor cheats (swindlers and thieves), nor greedy graspers, nor drunkards, nor foulmouthed revilers and slanderers, nor extortioners and robbers will inherit or have any share in the kingdom of God.”	

The potential to sin is ALWAYS there – NEVER trust yourself! When the devil knocks, let Y’shua [Jesus] answer the door! REMEMBER, you are the slave of the one whom you obey! Do not rely on your own strength!

*Jeremiah 17:5-8, 10 “5 Thus says the Lord: **Cursed [with great evil] is the strong man who trusts in and relies on frail man, making weak [human] flesh his arm, and whose mind and heart turn aside from the Lord.** 6 For he shall be like a shrub or a person naked and destitute in the desert; and he shall not see any good come, but shall dwell in the parched places in the wilderness, in an uninhabited salt land. 7 **[Most] blessed is the man who believes in, trusts in, and relies on the Lord, and whose hope and confidence the Lord is.** 8 For he shall be like a tree planted by the waters that spreads out its roots by the river; and it shall not see and fear when heat comes; but its leaf shall be green. It shall not be anxious and full of care in the year of drought, nor shall it cease yielding fruit. 10 **I the Lord search the mind, I try the heart, even to give to every man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings.**”*

Walking in and by the Spirit ...

Remember, a set of rules (do's and don'ts) cannot make you holy – it is only Messiah IN us that makes us holy. Keeping a set of rules appeals to your PRIDE! We must always remember:

- It is not effort but UNION.
- It is not struggling but YIELDING.
- It is not works but FAITH.
- His power delivers our will from sinful carnal habits.
- He teaches and guides us to live according to the inner Law.



The purpose of the soul is to govern and dominate man but God's Order is that his spirit must govern his personality. To walk in the Spirit implies that the soul has to submit to the spirit that is indwelt by the Holy Spirit. God will never force the human will – the gap between spirit and soul is bridged by OBEDIENCE. As soon as a certain aspect/area of the Torah [God's teachings and instructions in the first Five Books of the Bible] is written on our hearts, our conscience becomes very sensitive. Always keep in mind, this is the JOURNEY – process – of sanctification.

For instance, you are in company where people are sharing incidents that had happened to them. When it is your turn, you tell your story, but you add a few extras and just change the detail slightly. Immediately the Holy Spirit convicts you and tells you that you are lying!

Now you have a choice ... you either put it right with God or you ignore it.

If you also put it right with your friends, then God writes His Instruction of not telling lies on your heart and you begin to tell the truth always. Your conscience is now extremely sensitive in this area. We are systematically changed from glory to glory towards total freedom. It becomes a spontaneous reaction that flows from an inner Instruction⁴⁸ [Torah – God’s teachings and instructions in the first Five Books of the Bible] written on our hearts!

Obedience is not only possible, but through the POWER of the Holy Spirit, it is to become natural for a child of God.



YOU must choose!

⁴⁸ We encourage the reader to do his own study on this aspect – it was always YHVH’s original intention to write His Torah [Instructions] on our heart ... that we walk in His Ways in loving obedience.

“Child of God”

My child ...

You often say so willingly:
"Let *YOUR* Will be done in my life".

But I don't want you to just stand there **PASSIVELY**,
Waiting for things to happen,
As though you had **NO choice**.

So often My children think of Golgotha,
As though they **OWED** me so much.

You were once indebted to **SIN**,
Condemned and sentenced to death.

I did **NOT** pay for your debt,
Your condemnation and penalty of death,
Or cancel the **POWER** of death over your life,
And give you eternal life,
JUST so you could now be indebted to me.

I have died, **ARISEN**, and triumphed over death,

Now sitting at the right hand of the *FATHER*,

So that you could become My child,

A *co-heir* and fellow-worker.

Because I have set you free,

You are now **FREE** indeed!

Not just a slave to a new owner,

But a child ... A son, a daughter.

I do not ask you to serve me **WILL-LESSLY**,

I do not want to crucify your will.

I want to know whether you *truly* want to do My Will,

With a soundness of mind that will walk the road *to the end*,

Out of your **OWN** free will and desire.

That is what Gethsemane asked of Me.

When I said, "*Not my will, but YOUR will be done*",

God did not act against My Will,

But actually **respected** it.

For there it was I Who chose,

"I will to do Your Will".

WILL-lessness would never show the strength,

To empty the cup to the dregs.

He revealed His Will to me in **TRUTH**,

I chose in freedom, in **LOVE**, in surrender,

And I obeyed.

Nobody took My Life from me,

I willingly laid it down ...

In our relationship, in your relationship with **Our Father**,

He wants to reveal His Will in Truth, by His Spirit,

So that you can be **FREE** to choose,

And be a co-labourer in **LOVE**,

Serving the Kingdom of God,

Out of your own free will.

The Spirit will **NEVER** force you,
For that would rob you of your will,

Your *freedom*.

His Spirit will give you a clear revelation of His Will and Truth,

And then ask ... "*will you?*"

And if you say, "yes, I will,"

If that is **YOUR** sober choice,

"*Then we can,*" says the LORD.

What you decide is important to Me,

Therefore I ask, "*will you?*"

For I *respect* and greatly value your free choice.

Do not stand back from that which the Holy Spirit reveals as God's Will,

Saying, "*if it is His Will, it will come to pass ...*"

My will does not **ALWAYS** come to pass,

But is revealed so that you can make a Gethsemane decision.

Do you want to do My Will in truth?

The we CAN!

The decision is yours.

If you are sure of what you will,

"*I will make it possible*", say the LORD.

I will **BREAK** the chains of iron,

I will **UNLOCK** the doors of brass,

And will **lead and strengthen** you by my Spirit,

Revealing a new way for you to go,

For **I AM** with you.

Choose not because you **OWE** me anything,

But out of the freedom of *loving* Me,

And remember,

My **LOVE** has the quality of *forgiveness*,

Forgiveness which says ...

*"My child, you do not owe me anything,
After all, I LOVE you with an unconditional love."*

Isn't that what Golgotha has proved ... ?

Whether and how you respond to my love is YOUR choice.

I am with you,

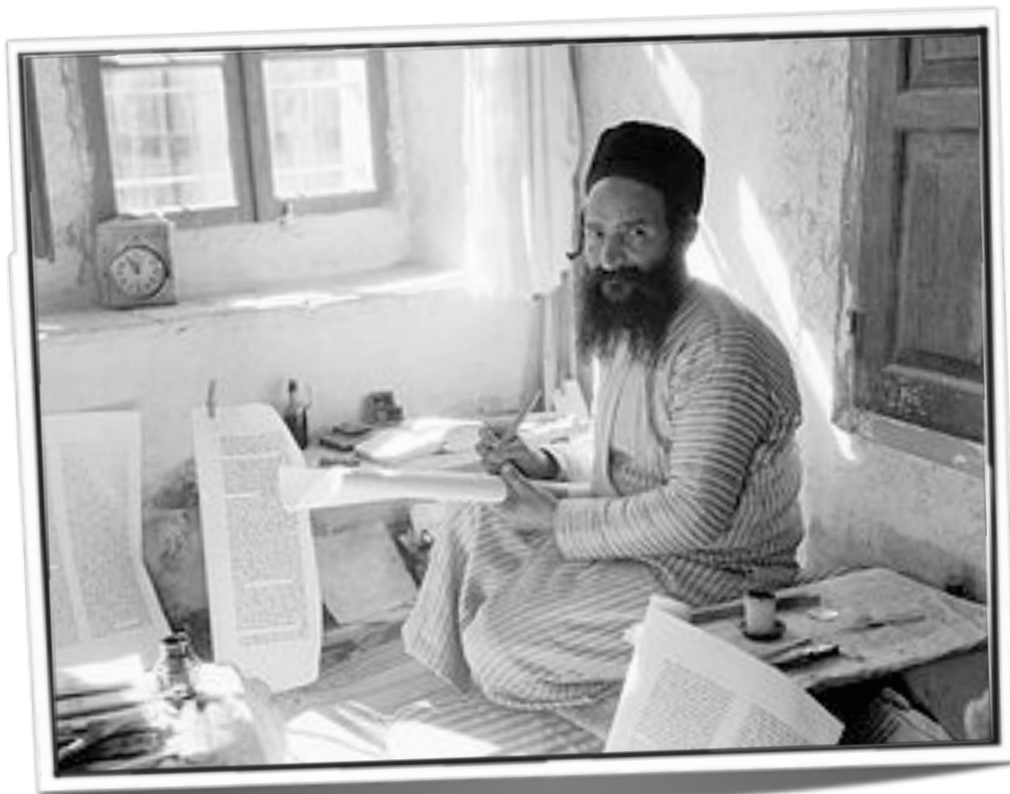
Y'shua

The Hebrew Language

The Hebrew Language ...

What's the context? It is so important to ask – and answer – this question, particularly when studying the Scriptures. We need to know what the meaning, understanding, culture, and value system of the text was in the language and time the text was written. Our modern-day mindsets cause us to define words within today's meanings, understanding, culture, and value systems ... however, this is often quite a way off from what was the original – and intended – understanding.

The Scriptures were written thousands of years ago in HEBREW, and in an Eastern-Semitic culture. If this is truth, then can we come to a different interpretation of any given passage?



In order to expand our study and understanding of the Word, we need to have a “crash course” in the original language the text was written, ancient Hebrew.

Ancient Hebrew has an alphabet of TWENTY-TWO letters. Obviously, words are written using a combination of these letters [note, there are no vowels]. However, what makes this language even more of an “adventure” is that each individual letter of the alphabet has a unique meaning, picture [symbolism], and number. This means, you can study and understand the plain text as is ... and you can study further by delving into the individual symbolism of the letters. Often, doing this kind of study brings out further meaning and richness to the passage. You will find that we have used this type of study – examining the picture-meaning of the Hebrew words – throughout our materials. We have found this such a blessing in our own understanding of the Scriptures, and trust you will enjoy it just as much! Truly, God's Word is ALIVE!

Ancient Hebrew⁴⁹

Ancient Hebrew						
Early	Middle	Late	Name	Picture	Meaning	Sound
			El	Ox head	Strong, Power, Leader	ah, eh
			Bet	Tent floorplan	Family, House, In	b, bh(v)
			Gam	Foot	Gather, Walk	g
			Dal	Door	Move, Hang, Entrance	d
			Hey	Man with arms raised	Look, Reveal, Breath	h, ah
			Waw	Tent peg	Add, Secure, Hook	w, o, u
			Zan	Mattock	Food, Cut, Nourish	z
			Hhet	Tent wall	Outside, Divide, Half	hh
			Tet	Basket	Surround, Contain, Mud	t
			Yad	Arm and closed hand	Work, Throw, Worship	y, ee
			Kaph	Open palm	Bend, Open, Allow, Tame	k, kh
			Lam	Shepherd Staff	Teach, Yoke, To, Bind	l
			Mem	Water	Chaos, Mighty, Blood	m
			Nun	Seed	Continue, Heir, Son	n
			Sin	Thorn	Grab, Hate, Protect	s
			Ghah	Eye	Watch, Know, Shade	gh(ng)
			Pey	Mouth	Blow, Scatter, Edge	p, ph(f)
			Tsad	Man on his side	Wait, Chase, Snare, Hunt	ts
			Quph	Sun on the horizon	Condense, Circle, Time	q
			Resh	Head of a man	First, Top, Beginning	r
			Shin	Two front teeth	Sharp, Press, Eat, Two	sh
			Taw	Crossed sticks	Mark, Sign, Signal, Monument	t

⁴⁹ http://elshaddaiministries.us/hebrewalphabet_old.html

Modern Hebrew⁵⁰ ...

MARK	NAME	PRONOUNCED	TRANSLITERATION
א	Aleph	Silent letter	‘ (or none)
ב/בּ	Bet / Vet	b as in boy (no dot: v as in vine)	b / v
ג/גּ	Gimmel	g as in girl	g
ד/דּ	Dalet	d as in door	d
ה	Hey	h as in hay	h
ו	Vav	v as in vine; “consonantal vowel”	v
ז	Zayin	z as in zebra	z
ח	Chet	ch as in Bach	ch (or h)
ט	Tet	t as in time	t
י	Yod	y as in yes; “consonantal vowel”	y
כ/כּ	Kaf/Khaf *	k as in kite (no dot: ch as in bach)	k / kh
ל	Lamed	l as in look	l
מ/מּ	Mem *	m as in mom (sofit form)	m
נ/נּ	Nun *	n as in now (sofit form)	n
ס	Samekh	s as in son	s
ע	Ayin	Silent letter	‘ (or none)
פ/פּ	Pey/Fey *	p as in park (no dot: ph as in phone)	p / ph
צ/צּ	Tzade *	ts as in nuts (sofit form)	ts / tz
ק	Qof	q as in queen	k (or q)
ר	Resh	r as in rain	r
ש/שׁ	Shin/Sin	sh as in shy (s as in sun)	sh / s
ת/תּ	Tav	t as in tall	t

* Has a different form when it occurs at the end of a word (sofit).

⁵⁰ www.hebrew4christians.com

Additional Resources

Please be sure to work through all the books in the “**Journey2Freedom**” series:

- J2F1 Man’s Purpose And The Gifts Of The Spirit
- J2F2 Generational Blessings
- J2F3 Blessings And Curses Over Motherhood
- J2F4 Water/Spirit Baptism
- J2F5 Spying Out The Land
- J2F6 Dealing With The Giants
- J2F7 Uprooting Generational Heart-Attitudes And Roots
- J2F8 Childhood Pain, The Brain, And Arrested Development ... How Do We HEAL And Come To MATURITY?
- J2F9 Mother-Bonds, Deception, And The False Prophetic

As well as our follow-on series to J2F — “**Journey2Wholeness**”:

- J2W1 Breaking The Curse Of Illegitimacy And Shame
- J2W2 Emotional Pain And Building Healthy Relationships
- J2W3 Emotional Pain And Restoring Relationships

In closing, after these curses have been dealt with and broken, it is very important to restore BLESSINGS ... we want to encourage fathers to take this calling seriously, and to begin BLESSING their families according to the Commandment of the LORD that the priests bless with the following blessing ...

Priestly Blessing

Numbers 6:24-27

“Y’varekh’kha YHVVH v’yishmerekha.

May YHVVH bless you and keep you.

Ya’er YHVVH panav eleikha vichunekka.

May YHVVH make His Face shine on you and show you His favour.

Yissa YHVVH panav eleikha v’yasem l’kha shalom.

May YHVVH lift up His Face toward you and give you peace.

Numbers 6:27 *“In this way they are to put **My Name** on the people of Isra’el, so that I will **Bless** them.”*

